Cruel Destiny

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · US Letter reading edition

Contents

Chapter Prologue	5
Chapter 1	6
Chapter 2	9
Chapter 3	13
Chapter 4	17
Chapter 5	21
Chapter 6	25
Chapter 7	30
Chapter 8	34
Chapter 9 ⑱	38
Chapter 10	43
Chapter 11	48
Chapter 12	52
Chapter 13	56
Chapter 14	60
Chapter 15	65
Chapter 16	70
Chapter 17	74
Chapter 18	78
Chapter 19	83
Chapter 20	88

Chapter 21 93

Chapter 22 98

Chapter 23 104

Chapter 24 109

Chapter 25 114

Chapter 26 119

Chapter 27 123

Chapter 28 129

Chapter 29 134

Chapter 30 139

Chapter 31 145

Chapter 32 151

Chapter 33 158

Chapter 34 165

Chapter 35 174

Chapter 36 183

Chapter 37 192

Epilogue 201

Alternate Ending Chapter 29 208

Alternate Ending Chapter 30 220

Alternate Ending Chapter 31 234

Alternate Ending Epilogue 247

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / Cruel Destiny.

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

Chapter Prologue

"Li..am he.. he r..a..p.e.." before I could finish my sentence he cut me off.

"Pathetic girls like you are meant to be fucked by those men, why are you complaining anyways? I fucked you, he fucked you just the size would be different, I am sure you enjoyed it as much as you enjoyed my dick" he said smirking looking at my broken form.

" How can you say this? " I shouted at him with tears flowing down my eyes.

" Oh shut up you orphan bitch, don't fucking ever raise your voice at me and after this lesson, if you want more, I have many other men like him," he said laughing at me

.

.

.

What happens when an orphan girl with the purest soul meets a man who from start played her, used her, and threw her ??

What happens when she finds the truth about the man whom she loved with all her heart?

Most importantly what will happen when destiny throws her into a maze that ends only at one place misery

But between all this, the most important question is 'will she ever be loved ?'

Join the journey of Natasha and the man who had played her well Liam Knights.

Chapter 1

Natasha POV

I sighed and walked out of the restaurant where I worked as a waitress.

It was the month of October and the weather is too hot. I was literally melting in this heat.

I said goodbye to the owner who was an old man. He is a good kind man.

It's very difficult to find a man like him. He respects us, girls, very much.

According to me, he is the best employer I have seen in my whole 17 years of life.

I started to walk toward my house which is half an hour away on foot from this restaurant.

I wiped my hands from my denim jeans. I pulled my hair out of the ponytail and made a messy bun.

It was evening time and I looked at my right side and saw a park where many kids were playing.

I walked toward the park and sat on the bench and watched kids playing with their parents.

I always come here to watch these kids playing with their parents whenever I have some time.

I always craved for it. Growing up in an orphanage is not easy. It's quite difficult to stay in that place.

I don't know who my parents are or anyone. I had spent 14 years in the orphanage.

I always have asked Mother Angela about my parents since childhood. But she always avoided the question.

I remember how she used to tell me that my parents would come to take me back to my house.

I was a child so I used to search for them through the window of my room.

I did that for 10 years but when I completed my 14 years of life, she told me the truth, the truth of my life.

She told me that my parents don't want me as they were teen parents. So they left me here.

I cried that day so much. I always thought that they would come and take me to my real home.

But I finally know the reality of my life. That I don't have any home. I have nothing.

I left the orphanage and started to work so that I can support myself.

I had slept on the streets for 5 days when I had no home. But then Mr. Bill Cameron, the owner of the restaurant, found me and told me that I can stay with him.

But I denied him and told him that I won't as I can't give him anything.

He chuckled and told me to work for him. I thought about this then nodded my head.

He lives with his wife and she is an angel. Their behavior toward me was very good.

I stayed in their home for one month and started to work in the restaurant as a waitress.

I also worked in their home to pay for my rent. Then after that, I had found a one-room apartment for rent.

It was small but was enough for me. I shifted to that apartment but I didn't leave my job as it was my only source of income.

I completed high school with a lot of difficulties. I got bullied and everyone called me a bookworm.

I ignored them but that doesn't mean that it didn't hurt me. It hurts but now I am habitual of it.

A little hand wiped my tears which I don't know when fall. I turned and saw that it was a 5-year-old girl.

"Don't cry, angel." She said with a sad pout.

I smiled at her and wiped my tears and said: "Ok I won't baby."

She smiled at me and went back to where other children were playing.

She is right. I shouldn't cry. I stood up and started to walk toward my home.

.

.

.

Liam POV

I opened my eyes and yawned. I sat up and looked at my surroundings.

Shit. I slept at her house again. I looked to my side and saw that Linda was sleeping.

She was lying on her back and was naked beneath it. Her fake boobs were on display as the blanket was not covering them.

I rolled my eyes and got out of bed. I wore my clothes and slowly walked toward the door.

But to my bad luck, she started to stir and opened her eyes. She looked at me with her sleeping eyes and smiled lazily.

"Hello, baby. Where are you going?" She asked me and stretched her arms and got out of my bed.

My dick stirred inside my pants when I saw her naked body. She walked seductively toward me and grabbed my collar and pulled me toward the bed.

One more round won't hurt right. I fucked her hard until she passed out.

I wore my clothes and practically ran out of her house.

Linda and I are childhood friends but now we are friends with benefits. Our parents knew each other as they were childhood friends.

Linda is a model and is very good at that. Our parents want us to marry each other but I don't want that.

I am only 26. It's my time to enjoy this life. I don't want to be in a relationship for now.

For me, a one-night stand is best as I can change girls every day.

I walked toward my car and drove off to my house. I live alone there with servants.



I got out of the car and went toward my room and slept again as today is Sunday.

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked the first chapter of the story.

This is going to be a very emotional story. So stock up your tissues.

This story has been roaming in my head since the last year. And I cried a lot while imagining it.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 2

Natasha POV

I woke up when I heard the alarm voice on my phone. I turned the alarm off and got out of the bed.

I checked the time and saw that it was 6 am. Shit. I am late. I have to reach there within half an hour.

I walked inside the bathroom and did my business then I took a quick shower and wore a grey top with black denim jeans.

I walked out of the bathroom and combed my hair and put it into a ponytail.

Then I wore my shoes and applied some lip balm and walked out of my room.

I took an apple from the kitchen counter and went outside of the apartment while eating it.

I locked the door and walked out of the building. I started walking toward the Restaurant.

Suddenly I bumped into someone and before I could fall, that person held me from my waist.

I gasped and closed my eyes. My heart was beating so fast that I thought that it would come to my mouth.

I opened my eyes when I felt a pair of hands squeezing my waist. It was a man who was probably in his early 20s.

I licked my lips nervously when I felt his intense stare on me. I removed his hand softly from my waist and took a step back.

"I am so sorry sir. I wasn't looking where I was going. Actually, I was in a hurry. That's why I didn't see you. Please forgive me" I said nervously

I tucked the strand of hair behind my hair and looked at the man who was just staring at me.

I cleared my throat and he shook his head to clear his thoughts and said "Hey it's alright. I wasn't looking where I was going too."

I just smiled and said, "Again I am sorry."

I was about to leave when he grabbed my wrist and said: "You didn't tell me your name."

"You didn't ask me. And it's Natasha." I said softly

He smiled and left my wrist then put his hands in his pocket and said "Beautiful name just like you. I am Liam"

"Nice to meet you Liam but I should get going. Goodbye," I said with a small smile then walked off from there.

.

.

.

I walked toward my apartment and smiled to myself when I saw the kids in the Park.

They waved at me and I waved back then reached my home. I cooked dinner for myself then ate it.

The next day again I saw Liam on my way. He was in his running clothes.

"Hey, we met again." He said with a charming smile.

He was really handsome. I mean this is the first time I am admiring someone.

"Yeah," I said then bit my lower lip.

I don't know what to say to him as this is the first time I am talking to someone other than Kelly.

Kelly is my best friend. She is from a rich family and lives with them.

"So where do you work?" He asked me curiously while leaning against the wall.

"I worked in that restaurant," I said and pointed my finger toward the restaurant.

"Oh," he said then asked me with a smile "Won't you ask me about me"

I just shrugged and said "it depends on you. I mean if you want to."

"I worked in Knights Enterprises as a PA of CEO." He replied back while staring at me without blinking.

"Oh, that's nice. I have to go. Goodbye." I said and walked away from him before he could reply to me back.

.

.

.

It has been a week and that's how we are meeting. I am still nervous around him.

I don't know how to speak to him. I always feel shy whenever he talks to me.

I wanted to discuss it with Kelly but she is not here as she is on vacation with her family.

Her parents are okay with our friendship. I mean they would prefer someone else as their daughter's friend.

I shook my head and headed toward my work. I saw him standing beside the restaurant.

He was scrolling through his phone but put it back in his pocket when he saw me.

He waved his hand at me and I waved back and stood in front of him.

"I was waiting for you." As soon as I got there, he told me.

I blushed and lowered my gaze. I looked up and gave him a shy smile.

"Okay I was too nervous to ask this but now I can't control myself. Will you go on a date with me?" He asked me with a nervous look

I looked at him with wide eyes. Is he joking with me? I mean he is so handsome.

Why is he wanting to go on a date with me? I am just average looking or maybe below that.

"Are you kidding me?" I asked him as I still couldn't believe it.

He laughed softly and said "Why would I? I am serious. Will you?" He asked me hopefully.

I don't know what to answer him. My mind is telling me to say no. But my heart is telling me to accept this.

I had always followed my mind this time I wanted to be selfish. I wanted to experience this.

I smiled at him and said, "yes I will."

He grinned and said "I am so happy that you agreed for this date. I will pick you up in the evening. Is that okay with you "

I nodded my head and said, "yeah it's fine with me."

We exchanged our phone number then I told him my address when he asked me.

"I will see you in the evening beautiful" he whispered and did the shocking thing.

He kissed my cheeks which made me red like a tomato.

"Bye," I said shyly and saw him running away from there.

I sighed and smiled to myself then walked inside the restaurant.

.

.

.

All-day I was thinking about my date. I don't know what to wear.

I walked toward my home and called Kelly. She picked it up after a few minutes and said "Hello Naty"

"Hello, Kelly. I want to talk to you about something. It's urgent." I said breathlessly

"What happened Naty. Are you okay?" I can hear the worry for me from her voice.

"I am going on a date" I whispered softly.

I don't want to shout this out loud. What if it was a dream and I would wake up by hearing my voice.

I can hear her squealing from the other side of the phone. I giggled to myself after hearing her celebration.

"Finally my Naty is growing up. I am so proud of you Kiddo. So tell me all the details." She said excitedly

I told her everything in detail and I can hear her happy voice from the phone.

"I am so glad Naty. Now wear something casual as it's your first date." She told me

After talking with her for some time, I cut the call and started to get ready for my date.

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it guys

What do you think about today's chapter?

The next chapter will be from Liam POV.

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 3

Liam POV

I groaned when I heard the ringtone of my phone. I started to search for my phone on the table with closed eyes.

After finding it, I opened my eyes slightly for a few seconds to swipe the answer button then closed it again.

"Hello," I said in a groggy voice

"You bastard, you are still sleeping. I fucking told you to stop fucking whores." I heard the noisy voice of my best friend Adam Thomas.

"Fuck off. And for your kind information, my record of fucking whores is 50 times less than you. I am not a manwhore." I said with an irritating voice and opened my eyes

I looked around and saw that it was 6 am in the morning. I yawned and stretched my back.

"Wake up and come to the office quickly. We have to get that contract at any cost." He grumbled

I just rolled my eyes and said "ok bye" and cut the call before he could reply.

I don't know why I am still friends with him. Maybe because we are friends from childhood.

We all trio, Linda, I and Adam, grew up together. We all are each other's back.

He also wanted me to marry Linda because she is like a sister to him.

I wore my running clothes and walked out of my house after drinking a glass of protein shake.

I started my running and after 1 hour, I stopped and placed my hands on my knees.

After taking the rest for 5 minutes, I stood straight and was about to start running again but stopped when a soft body collided with me.

I wrapped my arms around her waist to stop her from falling and looked at her face.

I internally gasped when I saw the most beautiful girl in the world. She is the epitome of innocence.

Her skin was fair and it was shining as well in the sun. Her cheeks are flushed pink.

Her hair was in a ponytail but some strands were kissing her skin. I don't think she is human.

She is a nymph who was sent on the earth for me. She opened her eyes and her eyes are unique just like her.

The color of her eyes is grey which was making her more beautiful. I heard a soft throat-clearing voice and shook my head.

She apologized and was about to go away from me but I grabbed her hand and God her skin is so soft and smooth.

I can't wait to fuck her. She is definitely hiding something well beneath those clothes.

I asked her name and she told me her name. Natasha, the name suits her well.

Her voice is so soft and sweet just like her. I wonder how she would sound when she would scream my name.

I only told her my name and didn't tell her my surname. I don't know why I did that.

Maybe because she didn't know me and that's very hard to believe. I mean everyone knew me here.

I went home with a grin and called my investigator and told her to find information about Natasha who worked in a restaurant.

.

.

.

I came home in the evening and a maid told me that someone came and gave her a file and told her to give it to me.

I told her to bring that file. She nodded and brought that file within minutes.

I walked into my room and removed my tie and shoes then sat on the bed and opened the file.

Name:- Natasha

Father and Mother:- Unknown

Occupation:- Working as a waitress in a restaurant

Education:- High School graduate

Friend:- Kelly Jones

Relationship:- None

I closed the file and my lips curled into a smile. She has no one in this world.

Hmmm, Interesting. But that means no one will question me when I will dump her after having her body.

She had no boyfriend which means she is a virgin. Oh God, I can't believe that I am going to fuck a virgin.

But she is not that one nightstand girl. She won't let me fuck her without any relationship.

I sighed and decided that I will play that game of relationship for virgin pussy. Yup I can do that.

.

.

.

I started running in that area. And according to my plan, I tried to be a good man, which I am not, in front of her.

She slowly but surely was feeling into my trap. So finally after a week, I asked her to go on a date.

It looks like she was fighting some internal battle but after a few minutes, she agreed.

I grinned and leaned down to kiss her cheek. She smells so good. I really wanted to bite her soft cheeks but I can't do that for now.

Her flushed red cheeks were making her more alluring. God who is she.

After exchanging our phone number, she told me her address, as if I didn't know that already, and left from there.

This game is going to be a lot interesting.

.

.

.

So now I am standing outside her little apartment. I knocked on the door and she opened it after a few minutes.

I was stunned when I looked at her. She is looking so beautiful in this simple outfit.



She was looking very nervous when she saw me staring at her. I gave her the bouquet which I was holding.

She took it from my hand and gave me her shy innocent smile and said softly "Thank you for these beautiful flowers"

She put the bouquet on the table and walked outside and locked the door.

We walked outside her apartment building and I opened the car door for her and she sat but not before saying a soft thank you.

I sat on the driving seat and drove off to a secluded restaurant where people won't recognize me.

I don't want people to make it news that I am dating someone. Nope, I am just playing this game for virgin pussy.

I don't want to be seen with someone like her. I only dated models and actresses and she is none.

Hell, she doesn't have anyone. She is an orphan. Maybe her parents regret having her and left her in an orphanage.

I shrugged it off mentally. I just want her on my bed and nothing else.

But for that, I have to play the last trick, the trick of loving her.

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

What do you think about this Liam character?

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 4

Natasha POV

We reached and I was about to open the door but he stopped me and said "Let me do it"

I gave him a shy smile and nodded my head. He smiled back and opened his side door and got out of the car.

He came toward my side and opened it. He forwarded his hand toward me and I held it and got out of the car.

It was a nice gesture. I heard from Kelly that only a gentleman does that on the date.

He held my hand and led me toward the diner. I can still feel the tingles on my hand when he held my hand.

He opened the door for me and gestured to me to walk first. I walked inside first then he came.

We sat on our chairs and ordered our food. He was staring at me continuously but I didn't meet the gaze.

His staring was making me nervous and making me feel something different.

"So let's play 20 questions. This way we can learn something about each other." He said suddenly snapping me out of my thoughts.

I looked at him and said softly "of course."

"Your favorite color," he asked me while staring at me.

"Black and yours," I said

"Mine is black too," he chuckled.

We played this game until our food arrived. I slowly started to eat it.

"Do you live with your parents?" He asked me curiously

I stopped eating and looked at his face. I bit my lips and saw that his gaze was now on my lips

"I am an orphan. I don't have anyone." I told him sadly

He held my hand and said "I am sorry. I didn't know about it. But I can understand that. I am an orphan too"

I looked up and saw his sad face. I felt something different in my heart. I squeezed his hand softly.

He looked at me with sad eyes and I said: "I am sorry too."

I know the feeling of being an orphan. It's very hard to live in this cruel world without any support.

There was a time when I missed having someone with me. Like when I got sick, that time I wanted my mother to take care of me.

Or when someone tried to molest me, that time I wanted my dad to protect me as all dads protect their daughters.

Or the time when I got my first period in my class. I thought I was having some type of disease which killed me.

I still want them with me but now I think they would be busy with their own children.

God bless their children and them a good life. What if I didn't get their love.

It was in my destiny to not be loved by them. They should not get any trouble because of me.

"Natasha are you alright." Liam's voice brought me back from my thoughts

"I am fine," I told him with a smile

He sighed and said "are you getting bored? Did I do something wrong?"

I looked at him with a shocked expression. Bored? How could he think like that?

Why would I get bored with him?. It might be the opposite? I am a boring person and I don't know how to talk.

"No. I am sorry it's just that I had never done this. I have never dated someone. Hell, you are the first man whom I have ever talked to. So I don't know what to do on this date. I hope you can understand." I finally told him what was in my mind.

He looked at me stunned and said: "I can understand as it was my first date as well."

I looked into his eyes to find something which tells me that he is lying but found nothing. I can see the honesty in his eyes.

But it was hard for me to believe him on this matter as he was so handsome.

Girls must be falling on his feet for one date. And here, he is on a date with an average looking girl.

I just gave him a smile and said "I am lucky then"

He rubbed circles on the back of my hand and said "Indeed you are"

Then we talked about other things. He told me that he worked as a PA of Mr. Knights.

He told me that his boss is very rude to everyone but he is his favorite.

I told him about my job and many things related to me. We talked to each other about our childhood.

"What are you most afraid of." He asked me when we walked out of the restaurant.

I bit my lips while having an internal battle whether to tell him or not.

"I am afraid of being touched by force," I told him honestly

I remembered when I was 15 and was coming back from work. The alley was deserted. No, a single soul was present there.

I heard footsteps from behind me. I looked back and saw that two people were following me.

I started to run but they chased me and pushed me down on the road. I screamed when my skin came in contact with the cemented road.

The wound on my knee started to bleed and I whimpered in pain and started to push myself back away from them.

They laughed and tore my top and was about to unzip my jeans but stopped when we heard yelling.

I looked ahead and saw that it was two men and a woman. They threatened to call the police and the goons left me.

I covered myself with the shredded top and ran from there. I didn't see my savior's faces as it was a dark alley.

After that day I started to get nightmares for a year and still sometimes they came.

"What about you?" I asked him ignoring his eyes

"I am afraid of loving someone." He said and I saw that he was looking at me while saying this.

I blushed and said, "We should go."

"Yeah, you are right. We should go" he said and opened the door of the car for me.

I thanked him and sat inside the car. He sat too and drove off from here.

The ride was silent as I didn't know what to talk to him about after my declaration.

He must be regretting coming on the date with me. I am ready to face his rejection as well.

But I enjoyed it very much. This was the best day of my life. And like every happy moment, this moment is also going to end

We reached my home and he parked it outside the building. Like before he opened my gate and I got out of it.

Now I am nervously standing in front of him. My heart was beating so fast as it would come out of my mouth.

He held my hand and said "I loved it and I would love to take you on a date again. Would you like to go on a date with me again?"

I felt an immense amount of happiness when I heard those words out.

I gave him a big smile and said "I would love to"

I heard him sigh in relief. He leaned down to my face and I got nervous.

Is he going to kiss me? Am I ready for my first kiss? That was going on in my mind.

He gently kissed my cheek and said "I am glad"

He pulled back and I am sure my face must be red as a tomato. I gave him a shy smile and said "bye"

I walked past him and before entering inside the building, I turned back and waved at him then went to my apartment.

!!!

Chapter 5

Natasha POV

A week later

I woke up as usual and a smile curled on my lips when I thought about my second date.

It was very special and memorable for me after the first one. He kissed my cheek to bid me bye as he did on the first date.

Then he asked me for the third week after a week. I was feeling very happy.

I felt sad when I thought that he is too an orphan just like me. But I would try my best to fill that void in his life if he wanted me too.

Even if as a friend. Speaking of a friend, Kelly came back yesterday and she told me that she would meet me today.

I got out of my bed and did my daily routine and got ready into a black t-shirt with blue denim after the shower.

I picked up an apple and ate it quickly then walked out of my apartment after locking it.

I have never eaten anything in breakfast other than an apple. It was my daily routine.

I would never waste my money on something like this. I mean one-time food is enough for me.

I put my hands in my pocket and walked toward the Restaurant. I haven't seen Liam here after our first date.

I didn't pay attention to it. Maybe he has changed his way. It's a minor issue.

I walked inside the restaurant and changed into the waitress's dress which was a white blouse and black skirt with a white apron.

.

.

.

I walked out of the restaurant after bidding goodbye to Mr. Cameron (owner of the restaurant).

I started to walk toward my house while thanking God for ending my shift.

A creepy person who came to the restaurant was constantly staring at me.

I hated his gaze but I couldn't do anything because he paid a huge tip in the tip jar.

And also because he was rich. He was wearing a classy business suit and also he had done nothing other than staring.

I had sent Sandy to take his order but he told her that he wanted me to serve him.

I was uncomfortable around him but didn't do anything. I had taken his order quickly with a professional face.

The beeped of my phone snapped me out of my thoughts. My face lit up when I saw the name.

It was from Kelly. She has sent me the message that she is standing outside my apartment.

I fastened my pace and within 10 minutes, I reached my apartment.

She was standing outside my apartment as she had said and was looking beautiful as always



As soon as she saw me, she lunged at me and hugged me tight and I returned her hug with a chuckle.

"I missed you Naty so much." She squealed in my ear making me wince.

"I missed you too kelly. But for God sake stop shouting in my ear." I said with a smile and she pulled away with a pout.

"You are bad. But I am forgiving only because you are my bestie." She grinned

I shook my head with a smile and unlocked the door. We entered inside and she slumped on the couch with a sigh.

I turned toward her and said "I am going to take a quick shower till then take some rest. After that, I would make a delicious dinner for you."

She nodded and closed her eyes. I went inside the room and went inside the bathroom with PJs.

After taking a quick shower, I wore my clothes and walked out of the bathroom.

I heard her soft snores as soon as I entered the living room. I went toward the open kitchen and made spaghetti and mushroom risotto.

After an hour, I was done making both and went toward the couch to wake her up.

She woke and wiped the drool from her face and I laughed loudly at that.

I served her the food then to myself. She ate the first bite and squealed loudly.

"Oh, God. This is amazing Naty. I loved it." She grinned

I smiled back at her and said a thank you then ate my food.

After eating and washing the dishes, we sat on my bed well more like we're lying on it.

"So. How was your first date?" She asked me curiously.

My eyes lit up when I thought about it and said "It was amazing kelly. He behaved like a gentleman. And then he told me that he liked me and wanted me to take on a second date."

I was grinning like a fool when I completed telling her. She was looking at me with shock then grinned.

"I am so glad that my little girl is growing up. So now spill what happened on the second date." She asked excitedly

With a smile, I told her about our second date which was also nice like the previous one.

"And he wanted to take me on a date next week. And I said yes" I said and took a breath finally, after telling her.

"Wow. Seems like a good guy. What's his name?" She asked and put her head in my lap.

"His name is Liam and he is too an orphan just like me," I told her with a sad smile.

She gave me back an angry one and said "I am your family Naty. You are alone."

"And I am glad," I said and kissed her head.

"So have you guys kissed each other yet?" She asked me with a raised eyebrow.

I blushed at that thought and shook my head then said "Ummm. He had only kissed my cheek thrice."

She gave a smile then her expression turned serious and she sat up and looked at me in the eyes seriously.

"Ok, Naty, I know that it's new for you. And I am like your sister so I don't want you to get hurt. So please listen to me." She said with a serious look.

I nodded my head and said, "of course I would listen to you."

"You are new to this relationship and dating things. And I have done it and am still doing it. So."

She sighed and grabbed my hand and said "Don't let him get physical to you without any commitments. By commitment, I mean like giving you a promise ring, engagement ring etc. Do you understand me?"

I nodded my head and said, "Of course I wouldn't let him have umm sex with me before any commitment."

She smiled and said "I am not discouraging you. If you want you can sex with him. But I know you, sweety. You aren't that type."

"But there are a lot of men who only want your body. They won't care about your heart or your feelings. They think that they can easily lure us with their fake affection and money." She whispered in pain.

She then placed her palm on my face and said "I just don't want you to get hurt. I know you would get your feelings involved in it. Then it would hurt you so much. And I don't want you to go through that pain. You are really a sensitive girl"

"And most of all you don't deserve that type of pain." She continued

I just hugged her and said, "I am glad I have a friend like you."

"Same Naty same." She whispered.

!!!

Chapter 6

6 months later.

Third Person POV

It has been seven months since Natasha and Liam started dating each other.

Liam, according to his plan, took her to many dates but Natasha didn't let him get near her.

He tried smooth-talking and many things but she didn't budge and now this was irritating him.

He even gave her some flowers and chocolates which girls obviously like. But she is different.

He never dated anyone ever in his life. For him one-night stands are good.

But for this girl, he can do anything. She was the only one whom he dated. So the least she could do is spread her legs for him.

He spent almost every night jerking off while thinking about her virgin pussy.

Now he didn't want to fuck any girl except her. That doesn't mean he didn't try.

He tried almost every night to find some other girl but his dick just wouldn't get hard.

He is frustrated and wanted some release and now his hands aren't doing that work anymore.

He doesn't want to suffer from blue balls. He clenched his teeth in irritation and pushed the duvet off his body.

He was sweating heavily due to arousal. He raked his finger on his hair and groaned loudly.

No, he won't wait anymore. Now it's time to execute his last plan. He smirked evilly and went to the bathroom to take a long cold shower.

.

.

.

Natasha was on cloud nine. She has finally found someone who understood her well.

Liam is really a gentleman in her eyes as he never told her to kiss him or vice versa.

That thought made her fall in love with him more. She had fallen in love with him.

But didn't confess as she was nervous and afraid of his reaction. What if he told her that he doesn't love or that she is just a friend for him.

It was her first time falling in love and it was the first time she was feeling care and love from someone.

It was the most amazing and extraordinary feeling she had ever felt.

Since childhood, she saw pity, disgust, and hate for her in people's eyes but she didn't see that in Liam's eyes.

She was getting ready for the date. It was evening time and he wanted to take her to an amusement park and she agreed with it.

She wore one of the four dresses she had in her wardrobe. It was a simple black dress that came to her knees.



She paired it with beige heels and a watch. Then combed her hair and let it fall down till her waist.

She was looking nervously in the mirror and tried to smile. She sighed when she couldn't do that and huffed in annoyance.

The bell rang and she literally ran to open the door but stopped herself and took some seconds to control her breathing.

She doesn't want him to see her as desperate herself. After a minute, she opened the door and saw him standing outside.

Her heart skipped a beat when she saw his handsome face smiling at her. Like every time, he came with a bouquet of flowers.

She took that from his hand and put it on my table. Then she grabbed her clutch and walked out of the apartment and locked the door.

He held out his hand for her and she grabbed it. Her heart was beating faster at his gesture.

He opened the door of the car as always as he wanted to portrait himself as a gentleman in front of her.

But that stupid girl always got happy from it. He mentally scoffed and thought 'What a fool'.

Today she was looking so fuckable that he just wanted to forget his plan and have her in this car.

But no, he knew that she won't agree to it right now. And he is not a rapist so he can't force her.

They reached the destination and got out of the car. He opened the door for her and they both walked inside the park holding each other's hands.

He bought the tickets and they started to roam around. He was really nervous to choose this place as it was crowded.

And the last thing he wanted anyone to see him with someone. So he didn't shave his beard to disguise himself.

They sat in the Roller Coaster after roaming for half an hour. She clutched his hand tightly when the ride started.

He rolled his eyes and put his hand on her shoulder. He can smell her sweet rose perfume and it was making him hard.

When they reached the top, he signaled someone to stop it.

The ride stopped with a jerk and they could hear the whispers and shouts from the people who were sitting inside it.

"Oh God What happened?" He heard her soft whisper.

He looked toward her and saw that she was frowning and her lips were slightly open.

Now he can't wait anymore. He cupped her cheeks and made her look toward him.

She looked at him with an uncomfortable look as it was the first time she was so close to him.

But she tried to cover it with a smile and asked "What happened? Are you OK?"

He just looked at her without blinking his eyes and this made her super nervous.

"I want to confess something, Natasha. Actually, I wanted to do that after dinner but now I just can't control it anymore." He whispered softly.

"I felt something different in my heart when I saw you for the first time. And that night I just couldn't forget your face. But after our first date, I got to know about you." He said softly

He was practicing many lines at home but couldn't figure it out correctly.

And now whatever he said, it was from his heart which he wasn't ready to accept and called it fake.

He leaned closer and said, "What I mean to say is I love you."

She was shocked when she heard the words from his mouth. Maybe it was a dream.

She pinched herself which he didn't notice. It was not a dream.

She opened her mouth to say something but couldn't form any words.

He sighed and said "you don't have to repeat back yet. Do it only when you are ready."

He gave her a smile and tears fell down from her eyes. She can't believe that her dream was becoming a reality.

"I...I love you too." She whispered with a teary smile.

He sighed in fake relief and leaned closer to her. He again cupped her cheeks.

His breath was falling on her face which made her shuddered. He tucked the strand of hair behind her ear.

He darted his eyes toward her rosy pink lips. She saw it too and gulped in nervousness.

"May I?" He asked for her permission.

In reality, he just wanted to slam his lips on her and drink it but he stopped himself from doing something which he would regret in the future.

She bit her lips and he clenched his lips. She was seducing him by her innocent tactics.

She nodded her head and he slowly closed the gap between them and pressed his hard lips to her soft ones.

He almost moaned when he felt her soft lips. He started to move his lips gently at first giving her time to learn it.

She moved against him slowly at first but then their kiss turned passionately and heavy.

He caressed her cheeks with his thumbs while continuing kissing her. It was a heavenly feeling for him.

She was feeling awkward at first as it was her first kiss but then she memorized it quickly.

He pulled away when he thought that she needed to breathe. He looked at her face and saw that it was tomato red.

She was looking stunning with those red pouty lips and her chest was heaving.

He couldn't stop himself and leaned to kiss her forehead. Then pulled back with a shocked face.

He shouldn't have done that. This was an intimate gesture. He didn't know why he did that.

Thank God she was looking downward or else. He didn't want to think about it.

It was just a mistake. Yes, only a mistake.

!!!

Chapter 7

Natasha POV

I looked away from the window and looked at him. He was looking on the road while driving the car.

"Where are we going, Liam?" I asked him softly while looking into his eyes.

He turned to look at me and grabbed my hand and kissed it softly making me blush.

He has a tendency to make me blush all-time with his sweet acts. I really love him.

And I am glad he loves me back. It was still feeling like I am living a dream.

And God even if I am dreaming, I don't want to wake up from this dream ever.

Finally, someone is loving me. Those people in the school were wrong. They told me that no one would love me.

And I believed their words and cried a lot. But now I am going to prove them wrong.

Liam loves me and he told me that too a lot of time. Even I forgot to say sometimes but he never forgets.

"A surprise baby. I promise that you would like it. I love you." He said and gave me a dimpled smile.

"I love you too" I replied softly with a shy smile and again started to look outside of the window.

So today, again Liam is taking me on a date. He was spoiling me but I don't want him to ignore his work.

I still remembered our first kiss on our last date a month ago. It was everything I had imagined and more.

My phone pinged and I looked down and saw that it was Kelly message

'Give me the details as soon as possible.'

I bit my lips and sent back 'Will do'

Kelly moved from here to Chicago. I was sad that she has left me alone but it's her life.

I was no one to say anything and the reason she has moved to Chicago is because of her college.

At least she is living her life. I wanted to go too but I don't have any money.

I am trying to save some money so that I could at least take some evening or weekend classes.

It was around 7 pm and I could see some clouds in the sky but not enough.

We have now reached an umm forest area I think. He stopped the car and got out of it.

Why did he stop his car here? He opened the back door and grabbed take out boxes of food.

What is going on here? He opened the door of my side and held his hand out for me.

I gave him a confused look but still grabbed his hand and got out of the car.

"What are we doing here, Liam?" I asked him softly.

He cupped my cheeks and said "I told you that it's a surprise. Come"

He leaned down to peck my lips and I just smile while trying to hide my blush.

God this blush is going to be the death of me. I shook my head and looked at our joined hands.

We started our walk and after walking for 20 minutes, he stopped.

He was looking at something and I followed his gaze and gasped. My God this is so beautiful.

After watching it for a few minutes, I moved my gaze toward Liam and saw that he was staring at me without blinking.

His one hand was in his jeans pocket and a small smile was on his face making him look more handsome than ever.

I went close to him and stood on my toes and pecked his cheeks and whispered: "Thank you and I love it."

He grabbed my waist with his free hand and leaned down to whisper in my ear "I am glad."

He left my waist and grabbed my hand and led me toward the table.

Two plates with cutleries were placed on the table with a bottle of, which I assumed to be, wine.

He pulled the chair out for me and I sat on it and mumbled a small thank you to him.

He smiled and took a seat in front of me. He served us the food and I started to eat it slowly.

"How is it, Natasha? I mean do you like this food." He asked me with a smile

"Yeah, it's delicious," I said with a small smile on my lips.

After eating the food, he poured wine on his glass then on mine. I shook my head and said, "I don't drink."

"It's not alcoholic. At least try it," he said and moved my glass toward me.

With a shaky hand, I took the glass and stared at his for some seconds until he said "cheers"

I smiled and clicked my glass with his and whispered "Cheers"

I put the glass on my lips and again started to think about having it or not.

I looked at him and he took a sip and looked at me with a raised eyebrow.

I closed my eyes and took a sip and got surprised by its taste. It's actually not bad.

It's sweet and a little bit of Vinegar. I finished it slowly and put the glass on the table.

"It's quite different," I told him with a giggle.

"Really then you should take some more." He said and I shook my head.

"No it's my first time so I don't have any tolerance limit," I said

"Come on I am with you. You don't have to worry about this." He said and poured some more wine in our glasses.

I picked it and finished it. It's so sweet. I felt immense happiness within me which was a first.

I put my glass down and looked at my surroundings. It was getting very dark.

"Thank you for taking me on this date. I really loved it." I said with a giggle.

He was looking at me without blinking and said: "I have something to say."

He looked really ummm nervous. I nodded my head and said "What"

He grabbed my hand and kissed it. He then put his hand inside his pocket to take something I think.

He looked into my eyes and said: "You know that I love you right."

I nodded my head while looking directly into his eyes and said: "I know and I love you too."

"I love you so much that I never want to let you go. I want you always with me in my life." He said with love shining in his eyes

I was getting confused by his wording. What is he trying to say?

Is he going to break up with me? That thought saddened me. But if that's what he wanted then I would give him that.

"I want to secure this relationship with this." He said and opened his fist and I saw an infinity ring in his hand.



I gasped when I saw the ring. It's beautiful. But what does this ring mean?

He pulled my left hand toward him and put the ring on my ring finger then again kissed it.

"This is a promise ring. By giving you this ring, I am promising you that I will marry you in the future." He said

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So what do you think is going to happen?

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 8

Third Person POV

Liam's plan was working well and everything was going right according to his masterplan.

It was his last chance to fuck her and he doesn't want to let it go. So a promise ring would be enough for her to spread her legs.

He gave her what she wanted. A promise which would secure their future.

She was looking at him teary eyes while innocence was shining on her face.

He felt bad for a few seconds when he saw her innocent face but then shook his head internally to shake these thoughts off.

It was his last chance to fuck her virgin pussy and he is only one step behind it.

He saw how she was looking at the ring with so much love. He scoffed internally and rolled his eyes.

She didn't notice it as she was so busy admiring this cheap ring. 'The ring wasn't even that beautiful' he thought in his mind.

On the other side, Natasha was so busy cherishing the ring like she got something precious.

She didn't even have any slightest idea about what's happening in Liam's mind and what he was planning.

She stood up and went toward his side. He too stood up when he saw her coming toward him.

She hugged him tightly making him groan softly when he felt her soft tits crushing his hard chest.

"I love it and I love you." She whispered softly and was about to pull away but he hugged her tightly.

He caressed her back and pulled away only to lean down and captured her lips gently.

She kissed him back slowly and jumped when she felt his hand on her ass.

She broke the kiss and looked at him with shock. But he just smiled and said, "How about we spend our night here."

She looked at his finger and saw a tent that was not far from where they were having dinner

OBJ

She looked at him nervously and said: "I want to go home."

He bent down to her eye level and caressed her cheeks and said "You can go tomorrow. How about we celebrate our Promise."

She bit her lips while thinking about his words and nodded her head as she knew him.

And also that he won't harm and respect her wishes. He wrapped his arm on her waist and started to walk toward the tent.

He opened the zip of the tent and let her enter first then walked inside and zip it.

She saw a mattress on the floor and a heater to keep the cold away from them.

And a blanket was also there with pillows. She removed her shoes and kept them in the empty space.

He did the same and sat on the mattress. He patted the space next to him.

She gulped and sat beside him in a side-saddle position as she was wearing a skirt.

OBJ

Liam groaned mentally when he saw her smooth and sexy legs on display.

Now it was time. God, he was so excited that he actually squealed a little.

Natasha looked at him in confusion but didn't say anything which was good for him.

He cupped her face and turned her toward him. He slammed his lips on her and kissed her passionately.

She placed her shivering hands on his chest to push him away when he placed her lips on her neck.

He got irritated but didn't show it on his face. He looked at her in fake sadness and said: "Why did you push me?"

She bit her red lips and said "Liam. I am not ready to do that."

He scoffed internally and said "Why baby. It's how the couple shows their love for each other. Don't you love me?"

"Of course I love you. But I..... I am not ready to do that. And it's my first time. " she said in a whisper while fiddling with her hands.

He tucked the strand of her hair behind her ear and said "then how we are going to make our love strong. I have heard that our lovemaking would make love strong."

She thought for some seconds then shook her head and softly said "I... I can't."

He left her face and turned his back toward her and said: "I know that you don't love me and you don't trust me either."

She shook her head and turned his face toward her and said: "I love you and I trust you."

"Then why are you hesitating? I have promised you that I would marry you." He said with a fake sad look.

She looked at his sad face and thought about it for a few seconds. She remembered kelly's words.

She had told her to wait for a commitment. And he has given her a promise ring.

She doesn't want him to think that she doesn't love him. She does with her heart and if he wanted proof then she would give him.

"I... I am ready." She said with a forced smile.

His eyes lit up and he captured her lips quickly, hurting her in the process but didn't stop.

He bit her lips softly and she opened her mouth for him. He pushed his tongue inside her mouth and minded at her exotic taste.

He then left her lips only to attach it with her neck. His hands were moving all over her body.

"I promise you that you will never forget this night." He said with a smile

He turned on the heater so that they wouldn't catch a cold, not that they needed it anyways.

Their body heat would warm them enough. He turned on the lights and now he can see her amazing body perfectly.

And indeed it was that fateful night which she won't ever forget until her last breath.

!!!

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

What do you think about her decision?

Do you think that this would be their last meeting?

So the next chapter is going to be a mature one. So kids under 18 can read with your eyes closed.

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 9

Third Person POV

She was trembling but he didn't pay any attention to it and untucked her top from the skirt and pulled away.

He removed her t-shirt and looked at her bra clad tits. She saw his dark eyes on her body and covered it with her hands.

He frowned and pushed her hands away and started to peppered kisses on her neck.

He bit on her collarbone softly drawing a moan for the first time out of her mouth.

He started to suck on it and pulled back and saw his painting. The mark was bright red and it's making him proud.

He moved back his hand and unhooked her black bra. He can hear her heart thundering in her chest.

He removed it and threw it somewhere and groaned when he saw her dusty rose nipples.

He pushed her gently on the mattress and latched on her nipple. He licked it with his tongue until it got hard as a pebble.

He then sucked it gently with his lips while kneading the other one. He heard her heavy breathing and got turned on by it.

He gave the same treatment to her both tits then pulled back and removed his jacket then Tshirt.

She was looking at him in awe. He is so beautiful but still, he loves a plain woman like me.

She got shy when he saw her staring at him. His lips curled into a smile when he saw her shy face.

He leaned down to kiss her lips and said: "you are really innocent."

He pulled back and unbuttoned her skirt then removed it from the body.

He gulped when he saw her milky white and smooth thighs. His dick had gotten so hard that he had to unbutton his jeans then unzipped it.

He removed it and now he was only in his boxers. He had spent a lot of time with the girl but this one just got him excited as no one had done.

She closed her eyes when she saw him removing his jeans. She doesn't want to do it as she wasn't ready.

But she can't anger him. He had done nothing wrong till now and he had even given her a promise ring.

He traced on her pussy with her panties still on. He rubbed it until he saw a wet spot on it.

She was feeling something strange when he rubbed her from her panties.

She can feel the wetness on her panties and get embarrassed. Oh God, what's happening with her body.

He grabbed the hem of her panties and removed it from her body and threw it.

He looked at her in disbelief. She was the most beautiful woman he had ever seen.

She was the definition of perfection. A handful of boobs, narrow waist, wide hips, and a perfect pussy.

He stared at her cleaned shaved pussy which she covered immediately when she saw him staring.

He grabbed her hand and said, "Don't hide it from me."

She nodded when she saw his dark eyes and removed her hands. He leaned down to the level of her pussy and sniffled it.

Her smell is intoxicating. He licked her slit slowly, making her jump.

Her cheeks were pink and she was looking embarrassed. She asked, "What are you doing?"

He looked up and saw her red cheeks. He chucked which sent vibration to her pussy making her squirm.

"Tasting you," he said and licked her slit.

He grabbed her hips so that she won't get out of his grip. He latched on her clit and licked it.

He sucked it softly in his mouth making her moan wildly. He pulled her clit with his lips while licking it with his tongue continuously.

He left it and again lapped on her pussy while pushing his thumb inside her.

Her pussy was tight as he expected. She hissed when she felt a foreign feeling inside her.

He distracted her while lapping on his clit and occasionally sucking it. She can feel something building inside her.

It was like a knot in her stomach which was growing. He spread her lips and spat on her clit.

(Yacht scene guys 🐷🐷)

She was writhing on the mattress and grabbed his hair and tried to push him away but he didn't stop his torture.

He gave the last suck on her clit and she came hard. She was panting hard and her eyes were closed.

She left his hair and he straddled her and removed his boxers. He pushed two fingers inside her and he hissed in pain and opened her eyes.

"To loosen you up a bit." He said and started to pump and add another one which stretched her a lot and she grimaced in pain.

She had her share of pleasure now it's his turn. The mere thought of having her was pushing him to the edge.

He removed his fingers and pulled her legs apart. She felt the tip of his dick on her entrance and got tensed.

Her heart was thundering like a hammer and she was so nervous and scared.

He leaned down to peck her lips and slammed his dick inside her virgin walls, making her howled in pain.

Her tears started to fall from her eyes but he didn't pay any mind to them.

After giving her a minute, he pulled out his dick only to be forced back inside her.

She gritted her teeth to stop herself from shouting in pain. It's hurting like hell.

It was like he was tearing her apart in two pieces. She can feel the blood coming out of her vagina.

On the other hand, Liam was in heaven. Her tight pussy was squeezing the hell out of him.

She was exceptionally tight which was giving him immense pleasure.

Finally, he was having her and now he doesn't have to do this drama. His plan got fulfilled and now he is free.

He started to thrust harder and harder making her whimper but she somehow controlled it.

She bit her lips and thought this was how every girl felt on their first time.

She doesn't know why people enjoy it because all she is getting is pain.

But she doesn't want to show him that he was hurting her. He would be hurt and think that he was doing something wrong.

So she continued biting her lips to stop making any sounds. He was getting bigger and bigger inside her, making her hurt more.

Finally, after a few minutes, he came. She was feeling something warm inside her and it was making her sick.

He pulled back and she wiped her tears quickly and looked at him with a fake smile.

Her heart was beating very fast and she was breathing heavily. He was also panting hard.

"How was it," he asked her when he got calmed.

"It was amazing." She lied with a big smile.

She doesn't want him to get hurt. So she lied and he gave her a big smile. Her lie was worth it.

"I hope you aren't tired yet." He asked with a smile and again placed his dick again on her entrance.

She was scared and was in pain but she shook her head with a smile and said: "No I am not tired."

He fucked her hard for 2 hours then laid down beside her. The blood was still coming and he didn't make any move to clean it.

He just grabbed his handkerchief and wiped his dick and fell asleep while turning his back on her.

She was staring at the above all the time and tears were continuously flowing out of her eyes.

She turned her head toward him and saw that he was in deep slumber. She was trembling due to the cold and grabbed the blanket from her side.

She sat up and winced in pain but covered him with the blanket then herself and laid down.

She turned her face toward his back. She wiped the tears and sniffled.

It was the first time she was sleeping with someone. She has been sleeping alone since she remembered.

He was close to her but still, she was feeling so alone and cold. She was feeling sticky down there but doesn't have any energy to clean it.

After a few minutes, she fell asleep while thinking about today.

.

.

.

She woke up when she heard the voice of her alarm. She opened her eyes and sat up quickly and hissed in pain.

She looked at her surroundings and got confused for some seconds then she remembered yesterday.

She looked at her side and got confused to see that he was not there.

!!!

Chapter 10

Natasha POV

I got confused and looked around but didn't find him nor his clothes. I touched his side of the mattress and it was cold.

I picked up my mobile and saw the time. It was 6:45. I dialed his number and it was not reachable.

I looked down and saw dry blood and semen between my thighs. I scrunched my nose and picked my handkerchief to wipe it.

I again dialed his number and now it's switched off. Where is he? And why is he not attending my call?

I picked up my clothes and wore them slowly. It was a lot down there.

I slowly stood up and winced in pain and I can feel the sting of tears in my eyes.

I picked up my phone and my purse. I unzipped the tent and limped out slowly.

It hurt me a lot when I took each step. I looked around and shouted his name but got no response.

Now I am getting scared. Did..... Did he leave me here alone? I shook my head to remove that thought.

Why would he do that? He must have some work. Or he must be busy with something.

But the problem is I don't know where I am. He is the one who brought me here.

I turned on my GPS and saw that I am 1 mile away from my house.

I started to walk slowly toward the direction. My heart was pounding as I was alone in this forest.

I can hear the voices of the animals. I jumped when I heard the roar of the lion.

I clutched my heart and took some deep breaths. My body was shivering with fear.

I fastened my speed but the pain between my thighs was increasing with each passing minute.

He shouldn't have left me alone here. I don't even know the way from here.

At least he should inform me about this. I would have got up early to go with him.

I shook my head and sighed in relief when I reached the road. I started to walk toward my house.

There were no cabs around so I don't have any other option other than walking.

I again dialed his number but this time didn't call him as I don't want to disturb him.

After 1 hour, I reached my apartment and went quickly into the bathroom.

I took a quick hot shower and washed off the dried blood and semen. I looked at my inner thighs and got shocked when I saw bruises.

Maybe it's normal. I mean it was my first time. So maybe that's what happened with every girl.

But was the pain in my vagina normal? Because it's hurting a lot down there.

I got ready in a red t-shirt and black denim. I pulled my blonde hair into a ponytail.

Then wore my shoes and walked into the kitchen and took an apple.

After taking steps toward the door, I regretted my decision to wear denim.

Its material was rubbing on my bruised thighs, making it more unbearable for me.

I was thinking about taking an off today but I can't as I had already taken a day off 1 week ago.

I shook my head and saw that I am 15 minutes late already and it would take at least 20 minutes to reach there.

I locked the door and walked out of my apartment. I looked at my phone and saw no messages from him.

He had always messaged me good morning and good night every day.

But I didn't get any message from him today. I put the phone back into my jeans pocket with disappointment.

I had always heard it from the girls in high school that after taking their virginity, their boyfriends pampered them.

I don't want to lie but I wanted it too. I had thought that my husband would take care of me and would pamper me after taking my virginity.

I never imagined losing my virginity to anyone other than my husband.

Because I had never thought that I would get someone who would love me.

I always wanted to preserve my virginity for my husband. I don't want anyone to think of me as a characterless just because I don't have my parents.

So I had never done anything which would give people a chance to raise their finger on my character.

But Liam loves me and I love him. And he already told me that he would marry me.

I will try to call him in the evening as I don't want to disturb him.

I snapped out of my thoughts when I reached the restaurant. I took a deep breath and got ready to face some perverts.

.

.

.

One month passed but I didn't get any call or message from him.

Now, I am getting tense. Is he alright? I pray to God, nothing happened to him.

I tried to call him but he is not picking up my calls. I tried to message him but got no reply.

I reached home and sat on the couch. After trying to call him again which he didn't pick up, I got up with a sigh and went to the kitchen.

I made pasta for myself and ate it quickly. I searched for Kelly's contact and pressed the call button.

She had called me later that night. I didn't tell her about our lovemaking.

I had just informed her about our date and she was happy to hear that I am happy and she literally squealed when I told her about the promise ring.

Now I need to talk to her. Something is wrong with this situation and now I am realizing that I made a mistake.

She picked and in her cherry voice said "Hello Naty. How are you?"

"I am fine Kelly. How are you?" I asked her with a soft tone

"I am fine. So tell what happened?" She asked me with a serious tone.

She always knew what was happening with me. That's why I love her to the moon.

"Kelly I had sex with him," I whispered softly.

"What?" She shouted then calmed herself and continued with a soft tone "When?"

I took a deep breath then told her every single detail from the start.

"You had told me that I shouldn't do it until I get a commitment that he would marry me in future," I told her and wiped my tears.

"And now he is not picking my calls and not replying back to my messages. I don't know what to do kelly. I love him." I sobbed softly.

"Naty, wipe your tears sweety and listen to me," she said softly and I wiped my tears but still some fell from my eyes.

"There is a chance that he had done all this to have sex with you." She said with a calm tone.

I whimpered and pressed my trembling lips to muffle the sounds.

Is she really telling me that truth? Did he really use me only for sex? But he had promised me that he would love me.

And he had also given me the promise ring. Is that really a game that he had played for sex.

"But what about the ring?" I asked her in a hope that she would think about it.

"Naty, I had gotten an engagement ring from Mr. Adam Thomas (Liam's friend). But after having sex with me for 1 month, he canceled the engagement and told me that I am not worthy to be his wife. I got pregnant last year and miscarried the child because of stress. I didn't tell you about it because I was ashamed." Kelly said with a croaky voice.

I didn't know about it. I am such a bad friend. I didn't see the pain in her eyes.

"Kelly, I am such a bad friend. I didn't see the pain in your eyes. I am so sorry." I said with a whisper.

"Don't. It was not your fault, Naty. Maybe I am wrong. Maybe he was busy with something. Maybe." She said with a whisper.

"I love him, Kelly. Was it my mistake that I trusted him easily?" I asked her in a whisper.

"You should focus on yourself, Naty. He doesn't deserve it. You are strong." She said with a cheery voice.

"I don't know if I am strong enough to forget him, Kelly. I had never loved anyone and I do love him." I said and laid down on the bed.

I wiped my tears again which were flowing continuously. I bit my lips to muffle the sounds.

"Naty, I am with you. Everything will be alright don't worry." She said and I just hummed.

!!!

Hope you liked it

What do you think about this chapter?

The next one is going to be well emotional.

COMMENTS AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 11

Natasha POV

I rested my head on the cold wall and wiped my mouth with my palm.

After a few minutes, I stood on my shaky legs with the support of the wall and flushed it.

I walked toward the washbasin and brushed my teeth and washed my face.

I looked at the mirror who was reflecting my pale face. There were bags under my eyes and I was indeed looking sick.

It has been 2 months since my last date. I haven't heard anything from him or gotten any messages.

I have been puking for the last two weeks and now I am totally drained out.

I wanted to rest but I can't just take an off. I couldn't concentrate on anything except him.

I wiped the tears from my bloodshot eyes. I had told myself many times to forget him but still, I just can't forget him.

I heard my phone ringing. I sighed and dragged myself to the bedroom and picked up my phone from the bed.

It was from Kelly. I picked it up and in a tired voice said "Hello"

"Are you still throwing up?" She asked me in a worried tone.

I laid down on my bed and said "Yes Kelly. I am puking my guts out. And let's not forget this tiredness."

"Naty, go to a pharmacy and buy two pregnancy tests." As soon as she said those words, my eyes got widened.

Is she telling me what I am thinking? I can't be right. I can't be... Pregnant.

I sat up and suddenly felt my head spinning and again laid down.

"I can't be pregnant, Kelly. I had taken the morning-after pill the next day." I whispered.

The next day after our lovemaking, I had taken the pill as I didn't want to take any chances.

"You had done good work, Naty. But still, you have to take that test as pills are not that effective." She said softly.

I bit my lips and said "ok. I am going to purchase the test, Kelly. I'll talk to you after taking the test."

I bid bye to her and pulled my hair into a ponytail and wore my shoes.

I walked out of the house and went to the near pharmacy. I went toward the test section and got confused as there are many types of tests.

A lady who was in her mid-30s smiled at me. I gave her a small smile and she picked two test kits and handed it to me.

I thanked her and she just gave me a smile and said: "Use both of them for the accurate result."

I nodded and walked toward the counter and passed the test kit to a man who was sitting behind it.

He gave me a disappointed look and I ignored it, paid him for the test and took it from his hands.

I went to my apartment and walked to my bedroom. I took the test kit out of the packet and read its instructions.

With a heavy heart, I strolled toward the bathroom and peed on the sticks and placed them on the counter.

I washed my hands and picked them with tissues and went back to the bedroom.

I placed them on the bed and laid down on the bed after setting a timer of 5 minutes.

I closed my eyes and started to think about the possibilities of me being pregnant.

I mean I have had symptoms for the last two weeks. I have been puking my guts out and I have been getting dizzy easily.

Let's not forget that I didn't get my periods for 2 months. And my periods were always on time.

But if I am pregnant, then I would keep this child. This child has done no mistake so why would I punish him or her.

And if I am not pregnant, then I would move on and would never fall in love with someone.

I made a mistake this time and I won't repeat it again. I don't have any strength to face another heartbreak.

The voice of my alarm broke my chain of thought. I sat up and closed my eyes for a second and whispered: "Help me, God."

I picked up one test in my hand and saw that it has two pink lines. This means pregnant.

With a shaky hand, I grabbed the other one too, and it's also showing positive signs.

I dumped them in the dustbin and stared ahead of me. The tears started to fall from my eyes again.

I am pregnant. There is a baby inside me. I am not going to be alone anymore.

My baby will stay with me and I will give him or her all love. But I am only 17 and I don't know anything about it.

I don't know how I am going to take care of the baby when I can't even take care of me.

But I won't abort my baby. I had made a mistake by choosing the wrong person.

My baby didn't ask to be created in this way. So I don't have any right to take her life.

I wiped my tears and picked up my phone to call Kelly. She picked it up within seconds and said "Hello"

"I am pregnant, Kelly." I blurted out as soon as she said hello.

"Ohhh Naty, I am sorry." She said sadly.

"I just don't know what to do Kelly. I really don't know how to be a mother. I had never received a mother's love. Then how am I going to give that love to my baby?" I sobbed softly on the phone.

"Oh, sweety please don't cry. I'll try to visit you as soon as possible. You will be a great mother to your child, sweety." She said softly

I nodded my head even though she can't see me. I am really glad that I have a friend like her.

"I don't want you to waste your time, Kelly. You don't have to come here. I can handle it. I always handled my problems on my own. I am very lucky to have a friend like you." I told her and sniffled.

"You are so innocent, Naty. That bastard doesn't deserve you. God will punish him. I love you, Naty. Stay strong, not for yourself, but for your child. And don't think about that bastard. I know what you are feeling right now. I had faced that too. It will get better with passing time. I am here with you." She said all this sadly.

I can hear her crying and this broke my heart too. I am reminding her of her again.

"I love you too, Kelly. And I hope I will get you as my sister in my next life." I said with my voice full of emotion.

!!!

In the next chapter, they will meet each other.

And I swear to god, I had cried a lot of times while imaging their face-off.

I can't say the same about you. Maybe.

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 12

Natasha POV

I sighed and put my phone in my pocket. I am standing here right now in front of the Knights Corporation.

This is the same place where Liam works. I just hope that he has given me the right address.

I never wanted to come here and face him but Kelly had told me that I should tell him that I am pregnant.

And she was right. He deserves to know that he is going to be a father.

Who knows maybe he will love his baby when he or she will come into this world.

I walked toward the huge building. The guard who was standing outside the door nodded at me.

I gave him a small smile and walked inside the building. My heart was thundering in my chest.

I looked around and got confused after looking at the rich and luxurious view.

There are a lot of people who were roaming inside the hall while some were gossiping.

They all were wearing elegant and classy clothes which were looking very expensive.

On the other hand, I was wearing only a light peach color top with light blue color jeans which I had paired with white flats.

OBJ

It looks like I have to ask someone about him. I have to do this not for me but for my child.

I looked down and saw a very tiny bump which was showing because of my top.

I took some steps toward the receptionist to ask her but froze when I saw him.

He had just come out of the elevator in a business suit looking more handsome.

But I have one question. Does all PA wear suits in offices? I don't know about it as I had never come inside an office.

I took and deep breath and with courage walked toward him and when I was few steps away from him, I called him softly "Liam"

Now grab some tissues 🤧🤧

He stopped in his steps and looked at me. His eyes dilated and his face was reflecting that he was indeed shocked by looking at me here.

But he covered his shock expression with a cold one and strode toward with dark eyes.

He grabbed my hand harshly making me wince and asked: "What the fuck are you doing here?"

I was taken aback by his words. His words are a lot crueler than his expressions.

"I want to talk to you about something important," I said softly.

I was hurt by his behavior. He had always used his soft voice with me but now it had turned into a cold one.

"I don't want to talk to you about anything. GET OUT" He shouted the last two words.

I jumped at his tone and looked around and saw that now all the people down there in the hall were looking at us with a curious expression.

The guard who was standing outside, came toward us and looked at us and turned his gaze to Liam and asked: "Is everything all right, Mr. Knights?"

I gasped when I heard the guard calling Liam 'Mr. Knights'. But he works for Mr. Knights.

"You are Liam Knights," I asked him in a whisper.

He looked at me with a bored look and said "I am Liam Knights. CEO of Knights Corporation. Now, what do you want to say?"

I was dumbstruck after hearing his full name from his mouth. He had lied to me that he is an orphan.

His eyes were cold, not like the warm ones. I licked my dry lips and with all my strength said "I have to tell you something. Can we please talk about it?"

He rolled his eyes and said, "I am going to give you 2 minutes, say whatever you want, and fuck off from here."

I winced when I heard his crude words. Kelly was indeed right that all he had done to date just for my virginity.

The tears were stinging in my eyes but I held them. I won't let him watch my weak side again.

"I am pregnant." I blurted out

His expression changed into a surprised one then he started to laugh loudly.

I looked at him with confusion and wondered about his reason for laughing.

"Then sweetheart why don't you go and tell this to your baby's father." He said with a smirk.

I gave him a baffled look and said "What are you saying? You are the father. Why would I go to someone else?"

His smirk faltered and he clenched his jaw and said "I am not this baby's father. Now get out."

A lone tear fell from my eyes and I softly said "If you don't want me, it's ok. But please don't abandon your baby. You are the father. You know that you were my first."

He shook his head and said "I don't believe a slut like you. You had opened your legs quickly for me. Maybe you had done the same with others too. And now you want me to accept someone else's child."

Now tears were falling from my eyes but he didn't care about it.

"And many ladies come here daily and tell me that I am their child's father. You are one of them. Now don't waste my precious time." He continued with a mocking smile.

With a broken voice, I said "If I show you the DNA paper. Will you believe me then."

He grabbed my chin harshly and yanked me toward him and seethed "I am not that bastard father. You are the bastard child of your parents and now you want me to take care of your bastard child."

His every word was breaking my heart and shattering it beyond repair.

He left my chin with a jerk making me stumble a little. I balanced myself and looked at it with hurt.

"You can say whatever you want to me. But don't call this child a bastard. It was not his or her fault that their father is a liar who had faked his love to their mother so that he could have her." I said while pointing my finger at him.

"Your child would be just like you. A bastard. You didn't even know your parent's names or who they are. Your parents didn't even want you, that's why they had left you in an orphanage. Maybe they had known that you would be a disgrace to their name. That's why they had abandoned you." He said with venom dripping out of his words.

I pressed my lips to stifle my sobs. He was humiliating me in front of everyone.

I looked around and saw that everyone was looking at me. Some with pity while some were laughing.

I had not faced this humiliation ever in my life. Not since high school anyways.

But still, they never did things like this. But here Liam had crossed all his limits.

I looked at him with teary eyes and said "I don't know who my parents are. I know that I had no one. My parents didn't want me to know why they left me in the orphanage. I knew it all. You don't have to remind me about this. But this child won't be alone. I would be there with my child. Why did you do that Liam? Why did you play with my emotion?"

I wanted to know the reason. Why did he play with my heart and my trust?

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So I will continue in the next chapter.

So how many people here wanted to kill Liam.

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 13

Natasha POV

He sighed in frustration and said "I am not in the mood to answer your question. About that night" he said and gestured something to someone.

The person brought a checkbook and Liam wrote something and tore it from the book.

He threw the cheque on my face making everyone laugh and said: "This is your payment for that night and for the abortion of your bastard child."

He smirked evilly at me and said "You are not worth more than this as you didn't satisfy me enough"

I looked at him with anguish after hearing his words and his employees laughing.

I wiped my tears with my palm and with quivering lips said "I am not a whore whom you are paying. I had slept that night with you because I love you. I didn't care about your money. Don't insult my love like this. I don't want your money nor am I going to abort this child."

"Really. People like you only care about money. You are just a waitress right. How could you even think that I would love a poor girl like you? If I wanted to love someone then the girl would be from a rich family. You are nobody. You don't even have a surname and you are watching dreams that I will marry you."

"Then what about this ring?" I asked him while showing my ring.

He laughed and said "It was just a simple prank. It was a very cheap ring. You really think that I would give you a real promise ring."

He was still looking at me with a hard expression. He finally broke me today.

"I am poor. I know that you don't have to tell me that. I had no one since my childhood. You are showing me this attitude of yours just because you have money right. You didn't earn it Liam." I said and pointed my finger around this building.

Then continued "You got all this from your parents. You never know how difficult it is to earn your own money. That's why you are calling me poor but let me tell you one thing Liam, I didn't get anything from anyone."

I sniffled and tasted my tears on my lips and said "If I wanted to eat something, I had to earn it by working hard. The clothes I am wearing, I didn't get it from anyone else. I got it with my own hard work. And you had used me just because I was poor."

He was looking at silence. He didn't say a word and it's good. I don't want to hear any hurtful words from his mouth.

I gave him a small smile and said "You don't have to humiliate me like this in front of everyone. But don't worry, I won't show you my face from now on. You may have never loved me but I did with my whole heart."

I sniffled and said "Goodbye Liam"

I was about to leave but he grabbed my wrist and turned me around.

He grabbed my cheeks between his finger and pressed it hard and hissed "Don't you dare tell this to anyone that I got you pregnant. Otherwise, I will ruin you."

I nodded my head and with trembling lips said "I won't."

He left me and I walked out of the building while hearing the people whispers.

"Oh, so she was his new slut."

"She is pretty. I would have faked my love to fuck her too."

"She is looking like a gold digger"

"Orphan bitch"

I walked out of the building and now I couldn't hear their whispers and insults.

I wiped my tears and looked at the sky. The sun was hiding behind black clouds.

Just like I am living under darkness. Today is the last day I am going to cry for him.

I love him and would always love him but it's time to concentrate on my baby.

I walked toward the bus stop and sat inside the bus. I was looking outside the window and saw that it was drizzling.

It looks like the clouds were also crying for me. They felt my grief and that thought again saddened me.

The first thing I have to do after reaching home is finding another job.

If I wanted to keep the child then I have to do another job too as taking care of the baby is costly.

I am going to find a night job so that I could continue working at the restaurant.

I got out of the bus when I reached my stop. I started to walk toward my house while soaking in the rain.

No one can see me crying as it was raining heavily and I am thankful for it.

I approached my house within 10 minutes and opened the door with shaking hands.

My whole body was trembling and after locking the door of my apartment, I went straight to the bathroom.

I took a hot shower and walked out wearing my PJs. I towel dried my hair and sat on my bed.

Today was the most unlucky day for me. Liam had crossed all his limits to humiliate me.

I had never thought that he would stoop so low. That he would call me a slut just because I had slept with him.

It was indeed my mistake. I shouldn't have trusted him. He shattered my faith brutally today.

I picked up my phone and called Kelly. She picked it up and said "Hello"

"Hello," I said in a broken voice.

"What happened Naty?"

"Kelly I went to his office today. He is none other than Liam Knights. The CEO of Knights corporation." I told her with despair.

"What. He is that bastard Adam's best friend. Oh, Naty" I can hear the sadness in her voice.

I laid down on my side on the bed. The tears were falling down on the sheets beneath me.

"Kelly, What did you do when he broke your heart?" I asked her in a whisper.

She was silent for a minute then said: "I told it to my mother and she comforted me."

After hearing her words, I started to cry louder and asked "But I don't have a mother, Kelly. How am I going to get through this pain?"

I wanted my mother to be here so that she could reassure me that everything would be alright.

I sat up and sniffled hard when I felt that my nose got congested due to crying.

"You know what he humiliated me in front of his employees, Kelly. He told me that my parents had left me in the orphanage because they knew I was going to disgrace their name in the future. He told me that I didn't satisfy him. I was a virgin, Kelly. How could I have satisfied him? I was in

pain and bleeding still I let him have me. He threw the cheque on my face and told me that it's my payment for that night." I sobbed hard.

"I am sorry that I was not there with you, Naty. I am really a bad friend. If I had known that he was Liam Knights then I would have stopped you." She replied while crying.

After a silence of 5 minutes, I replied to her "I have to move on for the sake of my baby. I will always love him even if he doesn't want us."

She just sniffled then I continued "I was thinking about finding another job at night."

"Naty you are pregnant. You should rest " I cut her off and said, "I have to work for my baby so that I could give my baby all the happiness he or she deserves."

Then added, "I know I won't be able to give him all things as I don't have much money but I'll try."

!!!

Chapter 14

Natasha POV

I sighed and closed my tired eyes for some seconds after completing my second cup of coffee.

My hand went to my four months pregnant belly which was well hidden underneath a hoodie.

I am now showing and I don't want to show this to anyone or want anyone to know that I am pregnant.

I had done that one time and got a lot of disappointed stares along with some glare.

Let's not forget the 'slut' and 'whore' comments. It hurt me and still, it hurts.

But I couldn't stop these comments. So I had just let it go and tried to ignore them.

I had also found a night job as a bartender in a club after searching for a week.

It was not that bad. I mean I get a lot of bad comments but I had to do that for my child.

The distance was 45 minutes away from my house and I had to reach there at 10 p.m.

I always reach home at 6:30 pm so I have 3 hours to sleep then I would have to go to the club at 3 a.m.

It was very difficult for me to walk back home at that time as the streets and alleys were covered with darkness.

And I had a feeling that someone is following me. I wanted to leave that job but I can't as I have to pay bills and have to save some money for my baby.

So I don't have any time to sleep and coffee is the only thing that keeps me awake.

I drink at least 5 cups of coffee in a day and sometimes 6 cups as I have to keep myself conscious.

And now here I am sitting on a chair in the restaurant where I am working.

It was lunch break so only a few people were sitting and having their food while chatting with their loved ones.

It reminded me of my first date. I was so excited and nervous that day.

I wish I could change my past so that I didn't have to sleep at night while soaking my pillow with tears.

I didn't hear anything from him and I know he won't call me but I just couldn't convince my poor heart which was hurting.

"You shouldn't drink coffee when you are pregnant, dear" A voice snapped me out of my thoughts.

I opened my eyes and saw a lady who was probably in her early 50s standing in front of me.

I put the empty cup on the table and stood up and politely asked: "Do you need anything, ma'am?"

She shook her head and sat on the chair and said "Sit down, dear"

I bit my lips and sat on the chair again with nervousness. She has a British accent.

She is also very pale and beautiful not to forget she was looking at me with kind eyes.

It was totally new for me as all married ladies gave me a disgusted look whenever they saw my belly.

She gave me a smile and said "As I was saying that a pregnant lady shouldn't drink coffee. It's not good for the baby. How many have you drunk?"

I licked my dry lips and said "Oh! I don't know about that. I usually drink 5 cups of coffee and sometimes 6 cups."

She looked at me with wide eyes and shook her head and said: "It's not good, dear."

"No one had told me Mrs-" I stopped as I don't know her name.

"Oh, I forget to tell you my name. My name is Sophia Allen." She said with a warm smile and forwarded her hand.

I shook her warm and soft hand and said "I am Natasha. Nice to meet you, Mrs. Allen."

"Call me Sophia, dear. So didn't your gynecologist tell you this?" She said while shaking her head.

I looked at her with confusion and said: "I didn't visit any gynecologist."

She looked at it with shocked eyes and said "You should have gone for a check-up. So didn't your mother tell you this?"

Tears started to form in my eyes when I thought about my mom. I wish she was here with me so that she could help me with this.

I sniffled and said "I am an orphan. I don't have anyone."

I didn't look into her eyes as I don't want anyone to pity but she placed her warm hand on mine.

I looked into her eyes and got surprised when I saw the sadness in it instead of pity.

"I am sorry I didn't know that." She said and I gave her a small smile.

"But you have to go and visit an OB-GYN immediately as there are many things which could affect the baby." She said and I nodded my head.

Then she continued "I have recently moved here with my son. He is a Gynaecologist and had recently opened his clinic. You should visit him and if you want I will call him and book the appointment for you"

I gave her a teary smile and said "Thank you so much, Mrs. Allen, for this. I will be grateful for this."

She shook her head and said "No need to thank me, dear. I would love to help you."

She wrote something in a notepad and tore the page from it and handed it to me.

"This is my number and I have also written my son's number in it too. Call me if you need me, I'll be there for you." She said warmly.

A lone tear fell from my eyes watching her kind and helpful behavior.

I wiped it off and said "Thank you so much. I really don't have any words to describe your kind nature."

She just smiled and stood up and said: "I had always wanted a daughter."

.

.

.

It was 7 pm in the evening and I finally got ready for my appointment.

I just wore a grey top along with black leggings as my jeans are not fitting me anymore.

OBJ

I pulled my hair into a high ponytail and applied a layer of lip gloss.

I walked out of my room after wearing my beige flats and taking my purse.

I thought about making dinner but decided to leave it as I was getting late. So I just grabbed an apple and walked out of my apartment.

My stomach was growling but I just patted it. I was hungry as I didn't eat anything except a sandwich which I had in the lunch break.

I walked toward the bus station and sat on the bus. Some people were staring at me as always and I ignored them.

I reached my station and got out of the bus and walked for 5 minutes to reach the clinic.

The clinic was very big and many people were wandering inside and some were standing outside.

I nervously walked inside and reached the reception where one girl was sitting behind the table.

She gave me a smile and said: "How may I help you?"

A nervous breath left from my mouth and I said "I am Natasha. I have booked an appointment for OB-GYN"

She smiled and looked on her computer and said: "you have to wait as Doctor Allen is busy."

I nodded and she told me to sit on the couch. I did what she said and started to fiddle my fingers.

I waited for 5 minutes then the receptionist told me to go inside.

The nurse at the door took my weight measurement along with my blood pressure.

Then she told me to go inside. I knocked on the door and heard a 'come in'.

I pushed open the door slowly and walked inside with slow and steady steps.

My heart was thundering and I looked up to greet the doctor and blew a shocked breath when I saw the doctor.

He was indeed handsome and has a very gentle smile. He is looking very young maybe in the early 20s.

OBJ

He greeted me with a smile and said: "Hello my name is Scott Allen."

!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So what do you think about Scott?

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 15

Natasha POV

I cleared my throat and gave him a small smile and said "Hello I am Natasha."

"Nice to meet you, Natasha. Please take a seat." He said with a beautiful smile.

I took a seat in front of him and looked down at my joined hands.

I was very anxious about this as I didn't know if he was going to judge me or not.

"So I have checked your blood pressure and your weight. You are underweight according to a 4-month pregnant woman. Your BP is high and it's not normal. You have to stop drinking coffee." He said the last sentence with a chuckle.

I lowered my eyes and I could feel the heat spreading on my cheeks. His mother must have told him about coffee.

"I'll stop drinking coffee," I told him softly.

He closed the file and looked at me then asked "Why didn't you visit a gynecologist when you got to know that you are pregnant."

I licked my lips and said, "I didn't know that we have to visit a doctor."

"It's okay. But after today you have to visit monthly for a check-up. So that we can monitor your pregnancy." He said with a serious look.

I nodded my head and asked, "My baby is alright right?"

"For that, we have to do an ultrasound. Come on" He said and stood up from his chair.

I stood up too and laid down on the bed as he told me. He then told me to lower my pants and tuck my top underneath my breast.

I did what he had told me. He squirted some type of gel on my stomach and I flinched due to its coldness.

"Sorry," he said with a smile.

I just shook my head and said "It's ok"

He then picked up the ultrasound wand and started to move it around my lower stomach.

He was constantly looking at the screen. I turned my gaze too but got confused as I couldn't see anything.

"There is your baby," he said and pointed toward a little body type thing.

"There is the head and two hands and legs." He pointed toward the screen

And this time I could see the baby's head and it's hands and legs. It is so small and tiny.

Tears fell from my eyes after looking at the proof that I am indeed pregnant and there is a baby inside me.

"Here is the heartbeat" As soon as Dr. Allen completed his sentence, I could hear a fast heartbeat.

"The baby's heartbeat is okay. But we have to wait for a month to know its gender." He said with a nod.

"Okay," I said and sniffled.

He gave me some tissues and I wiped the gel from my stomach and adjusted my clothes.

Then we again sat on our respective chairs. He started to write something on the file.

He looked up at me from the file and stared at it for a few seconds then shook his head.

I looked at him with a confused face but didn't say anything. He gave me a prescription along with my file.

"You have to take this prenatal vitamin for the rest of your pregnancy along with these medicines." He said and pressed his lips.

"Now, you have to visit next month for the checkup. And in that checkup, we will check the gender of the baby." He continued

I nodded and said "Thank you. It was nice to meet you."

I stood up and he nodded and said "We will meet soon as my mother won't stop telling me about you, Natasha."

I gave him a smile and walked out of the cabin. I looked at my mobile and saw that it's 8 pm.

I sighed and went out of the clinic. I started to walk toward the bus station.

I rubbed my stomach which was growling. I have to eat more as Dr. Allen has told me that I am underweight.

But if I eat more then how will I save money for my money. It looks like I have to find another job after the delivery of the baby.

I sat inside the bus and reached my home after half an hour. I walked inside my apartment and locked the door.

I moved straight to the kitchen and started to prepare my dinner.

I prepared it within 15 minutes and saw that I have only half an hour before I have to leave for the club.

I didn't get any time to rest today and my eyes are closing. Thank god now I am not having morning sickness.

I had very bad morning sickness in the first trimester. I couldn't keep anything in my stomach.

I quickly ate my dinner so that I could lie down for some time but to my bad luck, my phone started to ring.

I took the phone from the table in the living room and walked toward the room.

I looked at the name and I got shocked after watching the name. It was from Liam.

I frowned and thought 'why is he calling me?'. I was pondering whether I should attend his call or not.

But the phone stopped ringing and I didn't call him back. I don't know what was his reason to call me and I don't want to know it.

The phone again rang and this time I picked it up and said "Hello"

"Why didn't you attend my call?" He asked me as soon as I said hello.

"I was busy," I replied to him with a weary voice.

I laid down on the bed and sighed when my back touched the mattress. It was painful for some days.

"Anyways I wanted to know whether you have aborted that bastard or not." He asked me in a boring tone.

A tear fell down from my eyes and I rubbed my chest to ease the unbearable pain that I am feeling right now.

It's not like I was thinking that he would ask me about the child or if I am alright.

But still, I had hope that he called me to know the health of my child but no. I have to stop getting my hopes high.

"I won't abort it ever. That's my child. You had denied to accept it but I won't kill my child. And for the last, I am telling you to stop calling it a bastard. It's your child." I said with a strong voice.

My tears were falling continuously but I didn't let that waver my voice.

I can hear him laughing and then he said "My sweet Natasha, do you really think that I would accept this child. I just wanted your virgin pussy and I got it. It's a shame that you didn't suck my dick. But hey it's okay, I saved you because you would have died by choking on it."

I sobbed quietly after hearing his filthy language. I can't believe that I love that type of person.

"Stop. Don't insult my love like that. It's okay if you don't love me. But don't use this type of filthy language with me." I told him with a soft voice.

"Whatever. So if you are not aborting that bast- oops child then it's okay as long as you don't tell anyone that I am your child's father." He stopped.

Then continued with a dark voice "Because trust me if you told this to anyone then you won't like the consequences. I'll make your life a living hell."

After that, he cut the call. I put my hands on my face and cried hard on my destiny.

I am the most unlucky person in the world. I had craved love since childhood and when I thought that I finally got it, the person broke me.

Maybe I meant to be alone. Maybe I will die alone too without anyone.

Everyone was right when they told me that I am an unlovable person in school and no one would love me.

I stared ahead at nothing. That's what I am feeling, nothing. I am feeling empty inside.

I had thought that I would be able to forget him but after getting his call, it confirmed that I won't be able to forget him ever.

I looked down at my small bump which was growing every day and asked "You won't leave me, alone baby. Do you?"

!!!

Must be PMS.

Anyways what do you think of this chapter?

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 16

Natasha POV [6 months pregnant]

It has been two months since my last appointment and everything was alright.

Mrs. Allen had called me to her house for dinner 6-7 in a month for dinner.

She is such a sweetheart and has always taken care of me. I saw my mother in her and that thought made me sigh.

No matter how much I say that I don't care about anyone or that if they don't want me then it is ok.

But I am not okay. There are many nights which I spent crying.

I wanted my mother to be here with me so that she could tell me what to do next.

I wanted my father to be here so that he could handle Liam whenever he called me.

But they all are just dreams and nothing else. No matter how much I imagined that my mother was here with me.

It was just a lie and that thought was enough to make me cry.

My belly is growing with time as I got to know the gender of my baby. I am having a baby girl.

My baby girl is so sweet. She never does disturb me in my stomach. She was a silent type.

But I was concerned that something was wrong with her as she was not moving till the starting of the 6th month.

But Scott told me that it was alright as some babies move late but that doesn't mean that they are not alright.

Scott is really a nice person. We have become kind of friends and he has met Kelly too.

Kelly was always cold around him. People will think that she was being a bitch but now she was studying him.

She wanted to make sure that he was not like Liam. I sighed when I remembered him and sat on the chair in the restaurant.

It was lunchtime and I was having my sandwich. But after studying him for some time, she told me that he is a keeper.

I shot her a look of disbelief and said that I am not ready for a relationship and never will be.

I am still heartbroken and I don't think I would ever be able to move on.

I don't want to admit it but I still love Liam. He was my first and only love.

But I am sure with time I will be able to forget him but I will never love someone other than my baby.

I could never love someone after the betrayal I got from Liam. It was a lesson I had learned.

So I am just going to be his friend and nothing else. And also he is 27. There is a lot of age gap.

About Liam, he had called me many times in the last 2 months. I tried to ignore it all the time but after that incident, I had to pick up his call.

FLASHBACK [5 and half months pregnant]

I was just coming out of the bedroom as it was my time to leave for the club.

But I froze when I saw Liam sitting on my couch in the living room. His one leg was crossed over the other.

He had a cigarette in his mouth and he was smoking it. He was sitting with an arrogant look.

He didn't notice my present or he had just ignored it. But how did he get inside my apartment?

"What are you doing here?" I asked him in a shaky voice.

He just turned his head to give me a cold chilled look and dropped the cigarette on the floor and crushed it with his foot.

He was wearing a business suit looking like a perfect businessman.

He started to walk toward me when I asked "How did you get in here without my permission?"

He was now standing in front of me. There was only a few inches gap between us.

"Why the fuck are you ignoring me?" He asked me with a calm expression.

"You had told me to stay away from you and leave you alone and I am just accepting it," I told him with a shrug.

He grabbed my shoulder and pulled me to him. My bump touched his stomach and he looked down.

He was staring at my bump with a strange expression. Like he was watching something..... amazing.

I shook my head to ignore this thought and squirmed in his hold. I pushed him off me but he didn't let go.

He did a strange thing. He hugged me and started to draw circles on my back as if he was calming me.

He is again playing with my mind. Why does he keep doing it? I am also a human and I have feelings too.

"Leave me," I said with a strong voice.

But my eyes and voice were not complying with each other. My voice was trying to be strong enough but my tears were betraying it.

He pulled back and looked at me with an emotionless face and wiped my tears with his hands.

"Don't forget to pick up my calls or I won't be able to control myself. And stay away from men" He said and left the apartment.

The sound of the door slamming was heard and I sank down on the floor and held my knees together and sobbed.

Why is this happening with me? What is my fault in this? I am trying to forget him and he kept coming back in my life.

Did he want me to die of suffocation? I am tired of this and why did he think that I am seeing a man.

I put my hand on my mouth and muffle my sobbing. I wiped my tears and got up with a lot of difficulties and after freshening up left the apartment.

FLASHBACK ENDS

I sniffled and wiped my tears which I didn't know was flowing. This happened to me all the time.

My phone beeped and I looked down and saw that it was Scott's message.

'Hey, I will pick you up when your shift will end. Mom was so excited that she kicked me out of her house so that I could pick you up.'

I laughed softly at this and imagined the scenario. They both loved each other.

Scott's father died 10 years ago so now he lives with his mother so that she won't feel alone.

I shook my head and saw that my lunchtime was over. I threw the weaker of the sandwich in the bin.

The television was switched on to a news channel and it was showing some business news.

I have no interest in business so it was a boring thing which they are showing me.

But suddenly something caught my interest when I heard the surname knights.

I looked up and saw that it was showing Liam with a girl who was beautiful.

They are showing their moments together which was breaking my heart softly.

But the name which they told after some seconds, shattered my heart completely.

'Liam knights son of business tycoon James knights is getting married to his childhood friend and model Linda Jones.'

[Linda was the girl who was mentioned in chapter 1]

!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it.

So yeah Liam is getting married.

And our Natasha's heart again got broken.

The next chapter will be Emotional.

COMMENTS AND FOLLOW

Till then



Chapter 17

Natasha POV

Tears started to pool in my eyes but somehow I controlled it. My heart was literally hurting me.

I had heard that the pain of break up would be only emotional. But never in my nightmare, I had thought that it would be physical.

The news channel was showing their pictures from different places making me feel unbearable pain.

A lone tear fell from my eyes which I wiped quickly as I didn't want to show my pain to anyone.

I removed my gaze from the TV and started to take the orders from the customer.

I have to distract myself from him. I knew from the starting that it wouldn't be a reality.

Because getting affection and love from someone is like a treasure for me.

Hours passed slowly and somehow every once in a while my gaze went toward the TV as it was still showing the excitement of them getting married.

She is really beautiful and gorgeous and not to forget rich. She has everything that he wanted in his wife.

How could I even think that he would marry me? I am a nobody and I am not even rich.

I don't even have any money to give my baby a nice life. But I will try my best to give my baby girl everything in my limits.

I will shower her with my unconditional love. I will give her the love that I have been craving since childhood.

It's okay if Liam doesn't want to be in her life, I will compensate that love with mine.

I will try my best to give her a nice life so that she doesn't have to face this cruel world alone.

My girl is going to be the most beautiful girl in the world and I will try my best to save her from the monsters.

Monsters like her father who prey upon girls like me who are alone and have no one to question him.

I walked out of the restaurant when my shift got over. I don't have to change my clothes as Mr. Cameron (Owner) has given me permission to wear comfortable clothes.

He and his wife are a really sweet and lovely couple. They have helped me a lot and I am grateful for that.

I walked a little. That's when I heard a familiar voice and I turned back and saw that it was Scott.

I sigh in relief because I thought that it was someone else as I have a feeling that someone is following me.

I tried to ignore it and I am still trying but I don't why I think that something bad is going to happen.

"Hello, Scott. " I said with a little smile.

He returned my hello with a gorgeous smile that made him look more charming.

"Hello, Miss Natasha." He said and forward his hand like I am some stranger.

I giggled and felt refreshed after that. He really knows how to take my stress away.

"Don't do that. I am not a stranger." I said with a smile.

He stared in my eyes so deep and I felt like he was staring in my soul with his blue orbs.

I cleared my thought and he shook his head and with a smile said "Of course you are not, Natasha. You are..... my own."

"What," I said with confusion.

Maybe I am hearing a different thing as he has said the last few words in a whisper.

"I said you are a part of our small family now. Now come on. Mom is waiting for us." He said and gestured to me to sit in his car.

He opened the gate of my side and I sat inside and suddenly my mind went toward Liam.

I wanted to pull my hair and scream out so that I could get him out of my mind.

He is controlling me unintentionally and this was making me mad so much that I want to finish myself.

This thought came in my mind a lot of time that I should finish myself and free myself from this pain.

Then suddenly I felt a kick and this only because of this I am not doing it.

It's like she knew when I needed her and she made herself present for me at that time.

I am just living for my child. I didn't have any reason other than her.

I will stay alive only until my girl will live. If something happens to her then there is no reason for me to live.

"Natasha...Tasha..." I snapped out of my thoughts when I heard his voice.

My cheeks started to heat and I know they must be red. I looked at him and he moved his hand toward me.

My eyes got widened and now I was alarmed. He wiped my tears which I didn't know was falling.

I was shocked that he caught me crying and even more shocked that I was crying in front of him.

He cupped my cheeks and said "Why are you crying, Natasha. Are you alright? Is the baby alright?"

He was panicking and concern was evident in his voice as well as in his eyes.

I was touched by the fact that he cares for me. It is nice to know that I have gained a friend other than Kelly.

"I am fine. The baby is also fine. It was nothing. Maybe hormones." I lied about the last part.

He sighed in relief and said, "you had scared me, Tasha."

"Tasha," I said with a raised eyebrow.

"I... Ummm..." He was opening his mouth and then closing it.

I laughed softly as I found this very cute and refreshing. He finally sighed and started to laugh too.

"You can call me Tasha," I said with a smile

"I will. Well, Let's get going. Otherwise, mom will kill me. I don't want to die without marrying the one I love." He said while looking into my eyes.

I just gave him a smile back and said "Sure or Sophia (Scott's mother) will be angry."

He started to drive toward his house while I was looking outside of the car throughout the ride.

It was pleasant weather. I was feeling a little cold as it was the month of November.

I love the weather of winter and it's kind of good as I can hide my bump inside the hoodies and Jackets.

I am not hiding my baby girl like a dirty little secret. I just don't want anyone to notice it because then I will face a lot of complications.

The manager of the owner had told me that I can work as long as I don't let anyone know that I am pregnant.

And to be honest, it's not difficult as I have to stay behind the counter and make their drinks.

"We have reached. Come." He said with a smile.

I opened the door and got out of the car. I saw Sophia outside the door pacing on the doorway.

She was looking very impatient and mumbling something which I couldn't hear as I was away from them.

"Well looks like Scott is going to get a good scolding." I thought and giggled.

!!!

Chapter 18

Natasha POV

Dinner was amazing with Scott and Sophia. She had made sure to feed a lot so that I wouldn't be hungry.

Well, it's a good thing. Now I dont have to make dinner for me and I could rest for some time.

I hugged Sophia and said goodbye to her. She pressed a kiss on my head and told me to take care of myself.

Scott dropped me at my home and kissed the back of my head to say bye and told me to take care of myself and baby.

I smiled at him and went inside my apartment and locked the door.

I straight went to my room and removed the jacket that I was wearing.

Then I laid down on the bed and when I was about to call my eyes, my phone rang.

My face lit up when I saw Kelly's name. I hadn't talked to her in weeks.

She was busy as her exams were going on and she wanted to pass it with good exams.

Of course, I didn't disturb her. I picked up the call and said "Hello"

"Hello, Naty. How are you?" She asked me in a whisper

From her voice, I could say that she was sad and disturbed about something.

"What happened Kelly? Are you okay?" I asked her in concern

"I am fine. Have you seen the news?" She asked me hesitantly.

Now I understand what she was trying to say and why she is hesitant.

I took a deep breath and said "Yes kelly. I have seen the news. I know that Liam is getting married."

"Naty. I am sorry." She said with a heavy sigh.

"Don't be. It was my destiny." I said sadly

"How are you feeling Naty?" She asked me skeptically.

After a few seconds, I said "I am sad and heartbroken again. I mean he had told me that he would marry me"

A sad chuckle left my lips then I continued "have you seen her kelly. She is so beautiful and classy. Not to mention she is rich. She is his type of girl."

I leaned against the bed and said "I don't know how could I dream that he would marry someone like me. I am really naive and stupid to even think about that."

"But I just wish he will stay happy with her." I sighed.

"I can totally understand you Naty that you still love him and that's ok. You don't need to be ashamed of it. It's very difficult to forget your first love. It has been a year and still, I couldn't forget him." She sniffled.

"Anyways leave it. Tell me what are you going to name my niece." She tried to ask me with a fake excited voice.

"I am thinking about Scarlett. What do you think?" I asked her

"Wow. That's what I wanted to name to my daug-" she stopped in mid-sentence.

I closed my eyes and now I could understand it from her POV.

"I am sorry," I said while biting my lips.

"No. You don't have to be sorry. You know I was 5 months pregnant when I lost her. They wanted to dispose of her dead body but I had told them that I wanted to see her." She cried

"She was so small Natasha. So small. She wasn't developed fully at that time. But still, she was so beautiful."

She was sobbing and my tears were falling too. It's like I could feel her pain and her emotion.

I wanted to be there for her so that I could comfort her. She is alone there and had no one with her.

We talked for a few minutes then after saying goodbye, I cut the phone.

Then I fell asleep for an hour and when I woke up, my head started to hurt like hell.

But still, I stood up and after washing my face get ready. I locked my house and started to walk toward the club.

.

.

.

I wiped the counter clean and saw the time in the clock. It was 3 am in the morning.

My eyes were fighting sleep and all I wanted to do was sleep and forget everything about today.

I bid goodbye to Avery, a bartender, who was packing her stuff and walked out of the club.

The streets were empty and filled with darkness and fog and silence.

I zipped my jacket to my neck and caressed my stomach then I put my hands inside my jacket to keep them warm.

And for the first time, I heard the footsteps from behind me. From its sound, I could say that I was from 2 or 3 people.

My heart started to beat wildly in my chest. Even I could hear the wild thumping of it.

'Oh god. Please keep us safe' I mumbled a prayer in my mind.

I turned to the opposite side of my direction as the alley was dark and empty.

I know that it would take extra time for me to reach my house but at least I would be safe.

Now I can at least ten people on the road. I sighed in relief. I turned to look back casually and saw that indeed my doubt was correct.

It was three people who were following me and when our eyes met, I changed my direction.

I didn't let them show that I knew that they were following me. Now I have to be more careful.

I reached my house after making sure that they were still not following me

I locked my house quickly and checked it twice to make sure that I was safe.

Today was really a hectic day for me. I hope tomorrow will be good for me.

.

.

.

I wiped the sweat from my forehead and sat on the chair. Even in the month of November, I am sweating.

It must be because of the incident that happened last week. A week passed since I had noticed that someone was following me.

The next day there was no one. In fact, I haven't seen them for one week and I couldn't be happy more.

I heard whispering and giggling sounds from the girl who was looking outside at the table with dreamy eyes.

I was curious but I didn't have any energy to ask them about the reason for their giggling.

They are good girls and not like those who love to flirt with the rich ones and seduce them.

Mr. Cameron came toward me and said "Sweetheart a couple came to our restaurant for the first time and I want you to take their orders."

I stood up with little difficulty and said "of course I will."

I picked up the notepad and went outside to take their orders but I stopped in midway.

I can't believe that he would do something like this. He really wanted to saw me heartbroken.

It was none other than Liam and his fiancee Linda. They both were talking about something and it was she who was talking.

He was just sitting and listening to her. He had a bored expression on his face but he was covering it with a fake smile.

The smile which he had always given me and now he was doing this to her.

Well if he wanted to see my heart broken then I won't let him see my weak side again.

I put a professional smile on my face and walked toward them. They must have heard my footsteps because they looked up toward me.

His expression was cold and I just couldn't put my finger on it. It was something between irritation and anger.

"Hello, sir, and ma'am. I am Natasha your waitress for today. What would like to order?" I asked them with a professional smile.

OBJ

[Princess Mera 🐷🐷 is Linda Jones.]

!!

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So what do you think about Linda?

Is she going to be bitch or not?

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 19

Natasha POV

My heart was beating wildly in my chest and I just hope they both couldn't hear it.

Liam was staring at me without any emotions and suddenly his lips curled into an evil smile.

On the other hand, Miss Jones was gawking at me hard. She was looking very confused then her eyes went to my bump.

Her eyes lit up and she gave me a big smile and said "hello. I am Linda and this is my fiance Liam."

Her last words had hurt me but I still gave her a smile that had easily covered my pain.

"So what do you want to order, ma'am," I asked her with a smile.

"I have heard many good things about this restaurant. I would like to order today's special." She replied

I turned my face toward Liam and with a smile asked "What about you, Sir."

"I would order the same." He said

"I'll come back with your order. Till then do you want something to drink?" I asked them

"Just water please," Linda said with a smile.

"Sure, ma'am," I said and turned around and started walking.

"Liam she is pregnant." I heard Linda speaking to him.

"I can see that Linda. It is pretty much apparent to me." He replied to her in a bored tone.

"Do you think she will let me touch her baby bump. I haven't touched the baby bump ever." She asked him with an excited tone.

"I don't know. And why do you want to touch it? She is looking like a bitch to me." He said

I felt the stinging in my eyes and I could bet that he was telling her this because he wanted me to hear this.

"Nope. I don't think so. She is looking really sweet and she didn't stare at you like other people. She was attending you like any other customer." Linda explained to him.

"But she is pregnant and she ain't married. She must be a slut who doesn't know how to keep her legs close." He said venomously

I blinked my eyes quickly to remove the traitor tears which were about to flow.

"Don't say that Liam. Maybe it was her boyfriend's child. And even if she was single, still we don't have any right to comment anything about her character." She said with a sigh.

I was touched that someone had defended me ever in my life. I mean everyone just wanted to blame me about anything.

I went inside and told them to ready their order. After a few minutes, their order was ready so I took them out and served it to them.

"If you need anything, please call me," I said politely

I walked quickly as much as I could with my 6 months pregnant belly. I have to get away from his eyes.

I sat on the empty chair where I was sitting and took some deep breaths.

No matter how much I tell myself that his words are not hurting me but the result is the opposite.

I know if I tell someone then they will call me stupid and whatnot for not getting over him.

But they didn't know that no one had ever shown me that kind of affection and fake love before.

My heart just fell for him without my mind's permission. Oh god please give me the strength to bear this.

And I think I should start to ignore him again and behave like we didn't meet ever.

I saw that almost half an hour had passed which I had spent while thinking about my life.

I got up slowly and walked toward them and with a fake smile said "do you want anything else?"

"No sweety. It was delicious." She grinned.

"I am glad you liked it," I spoke with a smile.

Liam paid the bill and they both stood up. He put his hands on her waist and gave me a small smirk.

I ignored him and his actions. He then said "Come on Linda. We have to leave."

She removed his hand from her waist and said "Babe why don't you go and wait. I have to talk to Natasha about something."

He gave me a look which said 'Don't you dare say anything to her'. I ignored him again.

He left, then she turned to me, and with a smile said "please sit sweety."

With a nervous feeling, I sat down on the chair and she sat in front of me with a soft expression.

"I remember you. You have grown into a beautiful young woman." She blurted out.

I looked at her with confusion and wondered how she knew me and where she met me.

She must have noticed my confused expression and continued "it was 2 or 3 years ago. Remember some guys were misbehaving with you."

My eyes widened when I heard this from her mouth. I couldn't forget that night when I was about to get raped.

There were 2 men and 1 woman who had saved me that night but I didn't get to see their faces.

"Ah. I can see that you remembered that night. It was me, Liam and Adam, my friend. They didn't see your face as they were busy threatening the boys. But I had seen your face, you were looking shaken up." She explained softly.

So it was her, Liam and Kelly's ex. I couldn't believe that it was they who had saved me.

"I wanted to thank the person who had saved me but I was panicking that time. Thank you for saving me that time." I told her with a grateful smile.

She shook her head and said "there is no need for thanking me, sweety. I would have done that for anyone. But I was glad that I could save a sweet girl like you."

"Now I have a wish. Would you fulfill that?" She asked me with a hopeful expression.

"I will," I said

"I want to touch your bump and feel the baby. I have never felt it. Would you let me?" She asked me with a pout.

I smiled and stood up from the chair and moved in front of her. Scarlett was overactive today.

"Give me your hand," I said and put her hand on the lower part of my stomach.

She jumped when she felt Scarlett kick on her hand. I giggled and she looked at me with a delighted face.

"Baby likes me." She said ecstatically.

"She does," I said, and then she stood up.

She put her hand on my face and said "Take care of yourself and baby girl.

We will meet again if god wants us to."

She leaned forward and kissed my cheek and pulled back and said "I should get going otherwise my fiance will get worried."

"Bye," she said and I waved my hand to say bye.

She is really a sweetheart and I can't believe that she is friends with Liam and that Adam guy.

I shook my head and walked toward the other customers to take their orders.

.

.

.

My day passed in a blur after that and now it's time for me to leave.

I bid goodbye to my companions here and took my jacket and walked out of the restaurant.

I stuffed my hands in my jacket's pocket and started to walk toward my house.

Today was really chilly and my hands are literally freezing and all I wanted to do was drink hot coffee.

But due to pregnancy, I couldn't do that. Scott had warned me that it may affect the growth of the baby.

And I don't want to do anything which will affect the health of my baby girl.

I felt a hand on my shoulder and I jumped and my heart started to beat fast.

I turned back and saw that it was Scott who was looking at me with a concerned look.

"Are you okay, Tasha? I am sorry. I didn't mean to scare you but I have been calling your name from the past 5 minutes." He stated.

He stepped close to me and rubbed my shoulder for me to relax. I took some deep breaths and said "You just scared me."

"I am sorry, Tasha." He said with a guilty expression.

"It's okay. But what are you doing here." I asked him.

His hands were now on my waist and surprisingly I didn't flinch or felt uncomfortable in his embrace.

"I was leaving for the clinic but then I saw you and thought about dropping you at home." He said

I was about to reply but then I felt someone's eyes on me and I turned my face and saw that it was none other than.

"Liam"

!!!

Chapter 20

Natasha POV

What was he doing here? Didn't he just leave a few hours ago with his fiance?

He was looking at us with his cold expression and fury was evident in his eyes.

His eyes turned red when he saw Scott's arm on my waist and I removed it slowly.

He was silent for a moment then he spoke "Natasha"

He took a few steps toward us and looked at Scott with narrowed eyes.

Scott looked at him with a raised eyebrow and said "Do we know you?"

Liam scoffed and said "No you don't but she does. Don't you, Natasha."

I looked toward Scott who was looking at me with a curious expression and I knew that he wanted me to explain to him.

I took a deep breath and said "No I don't know you personally. I just met you today when you came to the restaurant."

If he wanted me to ignore him then I will ignore him with all my power.

I don't want him to think that he could play with my heart whenever he wants.

He looked at me in pure shock. He would be thinking that I would introduce him as my baby's father.

"What?" He whispered yelled

He was about to take a few steps toward me but Scott stood in front of me and shielded me from his view.

"Back off dude. If she is telling you that she doesn't know you then leave her." He told Liam

He then grabbed my hand and took me toward his car. He opened the door for me and I sat inside it.

The whole time Liam's gaze was on me. He was clenching his fist and was promising me something.

'I'll teach you a lesson.'

And that promise of him scared me. It looks like no one has ever insulted him or refused to recognize him.

Scott drove the car and I looked at Liam for the last time and saw an evil and dark smile on his face.

He is going to do something bad. I don't know why I am having that feeling.

"Tasha are you alright?" Scott asked me.

I wiped the cold sweat from my forehead and said "I am fine."

He nodded his head but I could tell that he wasn't convinced by my reply.

He looked at his phone and said "Well the person has canceled his appointment so I am free for 2 hours."

He looked at me and said "How about we take a walk in the Park or something. It would be good for the baby."

I was about to say no but after watching his face I couldn't. He was looking so hopeful.

With a smile, I said "I would love to take a walk in the park"

He grinned and turned the car and parked in front of the park. It was the same park where I used to visit.

But due to my tight schedule, I just couldn't take a walk or sit on a bench and watched kids playing.

But after 3 months or so, I will not be alone. I will have my baby girl Scarlett with me.

She will not let me feel alone ever. I know that and as soon as I thought about her, I felt a kick on my stomach.

I smiled and caressed my belly while walking toward the gate of the park.

He looked at my hand on my stomach and said "She is kicking."

I nodded my head and said, "Yes she is overactive today and has been like this for a few days."

He licked his lips and looked at me nervously and asked "May I"

What with people and their fascination with touching pregnant ladies' belly is beyond me.

"Sure," I said with a nervous smile.

It is a very intimate gesture. But he is my doctor and he has seen many things in my body.

It was kind of embarrassing when he did the internal ultrasound when I was 5 months pregnant.

I clearly remembered the day. I was coming back from my work when I felt pain in my stomach.

I ignored it and went to the washroom. That's when I had noticed the blood in my panties.

I was so scared that I had lost Scarlett and I literally booked a cab and went to the clinic.

Thank God Scott was there. Then he did an internal ultrasound and we had found that there is a slight tear in the placenta.

I was trembling from the fear that somehow I had harmed my baby but he told me that it's not my fault.

He had just told me I have to be careful and avoid taking the stress and have to eat nutritional food.

And also to avoid have sex, which turned my cheeks red, as it could harm the baby.

He also told me to take bed rest which was not possible as bed rest is a luxury, I couldn't afford.

"Tasha." He said while caressing my stomach.

I jumped when I heard his voice and said "yes"

"I was saying let's take a walk." He said and I nodded my head.

We walked around for a few minutes then he said "Let's drink hot chocolate. I know you want it."

I looked at him amazed and wondered how he knew that I was craving it.

We walked toward a shop and ordered two hot chocolates. I was about to pay for mine but he beat me to it and paid it.

"My treat," he said with a smile.

We walked around a little and sat on the bench for some time in silence.

Then after that, he dropped me at my home and told me to take care of myself.

I unlocked the door and walked inside it. I rubbed my hands together to get them warm as they were cold as ice.

I removed my jacket and put it on the table near the door. I walked a little in the living room and saw darkness in the room.

I frowned because I didn't turn the light off while leaving or maybe I had forgotten to light it up.

I was about to turn on the light when I heard the footsteps. It was faint but it was there.

I got sacred and before I could turn the light on someone clamped his hand on my mouth.

I screamed loudly but it got muffled in that person's hand. Oh god, who is there at my house.

I could smell the smell of alcohol in that person's breath and that shit is frightening me.

I squirmed in that person's hold but he didn't leave me. I used my hand and turned on the lights.

My eyes widened when I saw his face and he was looking very dangerous at that moment.

It was none other than Liam. I should have guessed it. He is the one who is entering my house without my permission.

Tears were streaming from my eyes continuously and my heart was running wildly due to fear.

I pushed him hard and he stumbled and now he was swaying in his steps.

Oh god, he is drunk. No what will I do? He looked at me in anger and said "Why did you push me, Nat?"

"What are you doing here?" I asked him in my trembling voice.

A grin covered his face and he said "I missed you, Nat. A lot. I was finding you at my home but you were not there. Why? Why can't I forget you?"

"Leave right now. You are drunk and you are not welcome here. Leave." I said with a strong voice.

He shook his head and slurred "No I won't let you leave me. You have moved on."

He took some steps toward me and now he is standing in front of me.

He touched my bump and caressed it and said "you forget about our baby."

And Scarlett chose that time to kick at his hand. He jumped back and his face had an awe expression.

"Leave Liam please " I pleaded to him.

I am tired and I want some rest but I couldn't when he was at my home.

"Not before this" I felt his lips on mine as soon as he finished the sentence.

He was pouring all his frustration and anger in this kiss and biting my lips harshly.

I squirmed in his hold and shrieked but that was not audible as his lips were on mine.

I heard the footsteps in the room and tried to push him but he didn't budge.

"What the hell?" I heard a familiar voice.

It was none other than Scott.

!!!

Chapter 21

Natasha POV

Liam detached his lips from mine, making me wince, and groaned "Don't disturb us. Fuck off."

I whimpered in pain and touched my lips with my finger and saw that it was covered with blood.

"What the hell are you doing here? And why were you forcing her?" Scott asked him angrily

Liam scoffed and seethed "You again. What the fuck is your problem?"

Scott took a threatening step toward him and stood in front of me, shielding me from his view.

I was grateful for that because I don't want to be seen by Liam when he was not in his senses.

"Are you fucking her?" Liam hissed loudly, making my eyes widened.

I gasped loudly and after a few seconds, the loud sound of a punch echoed.

"If I heard any word from your mouth, I swear to god, I will kill you." Scott threatened him.

I have never heard him saying things like this to anyone. I couldn't see his face but it must be filled with rage.

"Leave" he shouted.

I peeked from his shoulder and saw that Liam was wiping a little blood from his lips.

His eyes had an evil glint which was promising that he won't sit silently.

His dark eyes met mine and he smirked and said "Will see you soon Nat. He won't be there to save you next time."

With a last glance, he left with unsteady steps. My shoulders sagged and I covered my face with my hands and sobbed.

'Why can't he just let me live in peace.' I thought in my mind.

I felt an arm on my shoulders and I flinched a little. I removed my hands from my face and looked at him with teary eyes.

His face was covered in sadness but when he saw me looking at him, he covered it with a small smile.

I couldn't smile back at him at this moment. I am spent emotionally and physically.

But what was he doing here? I remembered that he had left me at the door.

He must have noticed the confusion on my face because he replied "you left your phone in my car."

I nodded and rubbed my stomach a little when I felt my baby girl moving inside my stomach.

She must have felt my nervousness and fear. I slumped down on the couch tiredly.

"Please sit." I let out before closing my eyes for a few moments.

He nodded and sat on the opposite couch. I opened my eyes and whispered, "Thank you for saving me."

He smiled and said "No need to thank me, Tasha. Is this the first time he came here?"

I bit my lips while thinking about whether to tell him the truth or not.

After what happened to me I just can't trust anyone. What if he thought that I am a slut for sleeping with someone.

'He is your doctor, Naty. He knew that you had slept with someone.' My spaciousness reminded me.

I shook her head and answered "No this not the first time. He had done that many times."

I am glad that he didn't ask me about my relationship with him. He just nodded his head frantically.

"You should report it to the cops. It's not legal. He is committing a crime by trespassing." He told me softly.

I thought about it for a few seconds and contemplated this idea. I am in favor of this idea.

He is right. Liam is crossing all his limits. He must be rich but he didn't have any right to invade my privacy.

"You are right," I told him.

I took my phone from him and with shaky hands, dialled the local police precinct.

"Hello," the person answered.

I cleared my throat and said "Hello sir. I am Natasha and I want to report someone for trespassing. He has been doing it for the last month."

"Please tell me your address, Miss Natasha." He asked me and I told him my address.

"We will be there in a few minutes, Miss." He said

I said ok and cut the call. I sighed and looked at Scott who was looking at me very keenly.

Suddenly I remembered that he had to go to meet his patient. I don't want him to be late.

"You should go. I remembered you telling me about your patient." I spoke softly.

"But you will be alone then." He protested.

I gave him a sad smile and said "I have been alone all my life and now I am used to it. Please go."

He was reluctant to go but after a lot of pressurizing from my side, he agreed.

"Call me if you need me." He said and I nodded my head.

He bent to my level and with hesitation, kissed my hair and said "Take care of yourself and your child."

I flashed him a small smile and said "I will"

With a last goodbye, he left the house leaving me alone. I raked my fingers on my hair and closed my eyes.

I don't know what is wrong with Liam. He made me fall for him and broke whatever we have after having sex with me.

Then after telling me to stay away from him, he again came into my life with a tornado who was hell-bent to destroy my life.

What does he want from me? Does he want me to break down in front of him?

I am tired of this life. I wish I could be free from all these pain and torture and live somewhere where no one can hurt me.

I snapped out of my thoughts when I heard the doorbell. I got up slowly and walked toward the door and opened.

There were two officers outside my house. One was a female officer and another one was a male officer.

"Are you Miss Natasha?" The lady officer asked.

"Yes I am Natasha and I am the one who called you. Please come in." I answered and opened the door and let them enter.

"Please sit," I told them

They took the seat and I sat on the opposite couch with struggle as my heavy belly won't let me do anything easily.

"I am officer Seth and she is my partner, officer Becky" They introduced themselves.

"Miss, Can you narrate the incident?" Officer Becky asked me.

I nodded and told them everything from the starting except the fact that he cheated on d me after having sex with me.

They nodded their heads then officer Seth asked me "Can you please tell us his name?"

I took a deep breath and said "His name is Liam Knights."

As soon as the words left my lips, he got widened and he said "The CEO of Knights Enterprise."

I nodded my eyes and I could see in their eyes that they didn't believe me.

"What was your relationship with him?" He further asked

I shifted nervously in my seat and mumbled "He was umm a friend"

I cringed as the left word left my mouth. He didn't even consider me his friend.

But I couldn't say that he had become my boyfriend for sex and when he got it, he left.

He hummed and gave a look to his partner who avoided looking at him and stared at me.

"There is a CCTV camera in the reception area. You can check it." I told them while fiddling with the hem of my jacket.

They stood up then officer Seth spoke "We will tell you if we caught him."

I nodded my head and got up too. With that they left the house, making me nervous.

.

.

.

Third Person POV

Both officers reached the local station and parted their ways. Officer Seth dialed a number and the person picked it after 5 minutes.

"Hello" he heard a deep authoritative voice

"Mr. Knights it's me, Seth. I am sorry for disturbing you but it's necessary." He spoke nervously.

"Speak" he heard.

"Sir a girl pressed charges on your son for trespassing and she has proof too." He told him everything.

"What is the name of the girl?" The person asked.

"Sir her name is Natasha." He let out.

"You know what to do. It's time to meet this girl. She has created a lot of chaos in our life." James Knights smirked evilly.

[James is Liam's father.]

!!!

Chapter 22

Natasha POV

My eyes opened as soon as I heard the alarm going on. I wanted to close my eyes and sleep again as I am hell tired.

My eyes were burning due to the lack of sleep. But I can't as I have to earn money for my baby.

I lazily got out of the bed and placed my hand on my bump. It was growing well which means my Scarlett is healthy.

I heard growling from my stomach and decided to make my dinner as I have to take off to the club.

I didn't have anything before I was so tired after coming back from the restaurant. So I went straight to bed and slept.

I rubbed my temples which were aching and headed to the kitchen. I made a simple sandwich for myself and had it quickly while standing.

After that, I changed into a hoodie and leggings. I wore a Jacket too as it was cold today.

After wearing my shoes, I moved toward the door and closed it. I made sure to check the lock twice.

I walked out of the building and started to walk. I put my hands in my pocket and covered my head with its hood.

A week passed but still, I didn't get any information from the cops. They didn't call me and I also didn't call back.

Maybe they are still working on it. But the good news was that Liam wasn't sneaking inside my house.

That's a really big relief for me. I think he got the signal that now he won't be able to break me.

Or maybe his fiance caught him or something. I don't care about it now.

I have to think about my child. I am not a free girl anymore. I am now a woman and will be a mother soon.

I have heard that a mother sacrifices everything for her child and I will do that too.

And I also had made a promise with myself that I would never associate with other men.

I had enough for a lifetime. Now my only aim is to be with my daughter and give her everything which I couldn't have.

I reached the place and went inside not knowing that this night will haunt me forever.

.

.

.

Hours passed and finally, it's time for me to leave. I was happy that I could go home and sleep for some time.

My eyes were dropping and I could tell that my eyes were bloodshot. I sniffled and walked outside of the club.

Two men were standing out of the door and were smoking and drinking while laughing loudly.

I clutched my Jacket together and hung my head low and stared at the floor.

I didn't want them to notice me. So I ignored it completely when I heard a catcall from them and pretended as nothing happened.

This was nothing new to me. It had happened to me all the time.

People are really shameless; they don't even care if they are hitting on a pregnant girl.

There was an uncomfortable silence on the road which was eating me alive.

The only sound which I could hear was the loud noise of wind which was blowing at a rapid pace.

I don't know why I am having a feeling that something is going to happen tonight.

Something which will change my life. I rubbed my chest to ease the anxiety which was building inside me.

I am going to leave this job next month. I have been thinking about it for a month.

I will find another job after delivery. But that's going to be a problem too as I will have my baby girl with me too.

I sighed and closed my eyes for a second then opened it.

I was about 15 minutes away from my house when something happened.

It was the same sound of footsteps that I had heard weeks ago. I saw that there was not a single soul present on this road.

My heart rate started to spike and I fastened my pace. I didn't dare to look behind me, afraid that I would become numb.

I could hear the footsteps loudly now which means they are very near me.

I could feel myself trembling from the fear. I was praying to god to save me and my child.

I don't want to die before giving birth to my child and I also don't want to die after that because I don't want my child to be alone like me.

But it looks like I was out of luck. Well, luck was never on my side then why would this time.

I was about to cross the alley when I felt a hand on my waist which pulled me toward a body.

I was about to scream but that person clamped his hand on my mouth to muffle my scream.

I squirmed in his hold and started to thrash in his arms when he pulled me into a dark and deserted alley.

I tried to push his hand away from me and scratched his arms. He groaned and banged my head on the wall.

My head started to spin and I saw stars. I couldn't scream as his palm was still covering my mouth.

I could feel something wet on my forehead which was trickling down on my cheek.

My tears started to roll down my cheeks when I saw that the person was not leaving me.

He turned me around so that he could push me on the road. I fell with a thud and covered my stomach quickly.

I winced in agony when I felt some pain in my midriff. I looked at the intruder.

There were two people. Both were looking young but were muscular.

There were lust and darkness in their eyes. They were filled with cruelty and malice.

I started to crawl away when I saw them coming toward me. But one of them was quick, he yanked me by my ankle.

I screamed and got a hard slap on my face. I sobbed and asked "Who are you? Please leave me."

None of them replied anything and just stared at me. My heart was pounding wildly and I think it will stop soon if I don't do anything.

I pushed that person and kicked at him which made him groan. He then looked at another person and nodded.

The other person came toward my head and clutched my hands above my head in his one hand.

"Please leave me. You can take whatever money I have. But please don't hurt me." I begged them.

My tears were pouring out of my eyes at a rapid pace. The person rolled his eyes and grabbed the hem of my leggings.

I was fully panicking now. I squirmed but he didn't let me go.

I thrashed and wriggled but I couldn't stop him when he dragged my leggings down my legs.

I screamed for help but no one was there. Not even a single soul was present to save from these monsters.

The person sat on my legs so that I couldn't move my legs or attack him.

I looked at him and pleaded for the last time before he could unzip his pants.

"Please don't do this. I am pregnant." I begged him with teary eyes.

He groaned and pulled out a gun from his pocket and nuzzled it on the side of my stomach.

I froze when I heard him saying "If you move even one inch, I will kill along with your bastard baby."

After that, I didn't move, afraid that he would kill my baby. I pressed my lips together to avoid screaming when he pulled my panties down.

He didn't remove it completely. Another one tightened his grip on my hands.

I closed my eyes and sobbed quietly on my destiny. My fate has always been cruel now it's getting worse than before.

I clenched my eyes shut when I heard him unzipping his pants. I wanted to fight but the muzzle of his gun, digging on my belly, stopped me.

I felt like puking when he parted my legs and I let out a loud sob and whispered "Please don't do this."

The person didn't care about me and shoved his length inside me, making me scream.

The person, who was holding my hands, put his palm on my mouth quickly to shut my screams off.

It was hurting. It was feeling like someone had poured acid inside my vagina.

That man didn't stop even for a second and continued the heinous act, ignoring my cries.

I couldn't believe that I am getting raped. I was in shock. I had been saving myself from this since my teenage.

I made sure to steer away from the men so that this won't happen with me ever.

I had no one to save me so I have to be my savior. I had to protect myself against the world.

But now even after doing everything, I could not save myself from these monsters.

A loud voice of thunder echoed and it started to rain. I closed my eyes when I felt it touching my numb body.

It doesn't take much for him to finish. I wanted to hide myself from everyone so that no one could hurt me.

That person removed himself from me and zipped his pants. The person who was holding my hands left it too.

I curled into a fetus position and cried hard. My whole body was numbed due to the cold and pain.

My lower part was throbbing in pain along with my head. Something was flowing out of my legs.

I opened my eyes and saw that it was blood and semen. I wanted to throw up after watching all these.

I looked above and saw that the person, who had raped me, was on call and was standing a little away from me.

His helper was not there. I sighed in a little relief that he won't rape me too.

I still couldn't breathe properly, afraid that he would do it again. I sat up and winced when I felt pain in my stomach.

I pulled my panties and leggings and wore them quickly, wanting to hide my nakedness from everyone.

I wiped my eyes, which was flowing continuously, and dragged myself toward the wall so that I could stand.

My back was hurting too so I leaned against the wall and hugged my legs, as much as I could, and put my head down.

I wept and that day a part of me died. My whole body was trembling in agony.

A car stopped in front of the alley and I looked up and from my blurry eyes, I saw the person who could save me.

It doesn't matter that he hates me. He had saved me once and maybe this time he could save me too.

He got out of his car and walked toward me with a smile and behaved like the rain wasn't bothering him

His name left my wet lips.

"Liam"

!!!

Chapter 23

A woman can forgive the person who had wronged her but a mother won't.

Natasha POV

He stared at me with those dark eyes which were empty. There was not a single emotion in it.

I shivered in cold and fear when his dark eyes watched me. I sniffled and wiped my eyes.

"What happened Nat? Are you okay?" He mocked me.

I gaped at him and then I forced myself to ignore his tone.

"Li..am he.. he r..a..p.e.." before I could finish my sentence he cut me off.

"Pathetic girls like you are meant to be fucked by those men, why are you complaining anyways? I fucked you, he fucked you just the size would be different, I am sure you enjoyed it as much as you enjoyed my dick" he said smirking looking at my broken form.

" How can you say this? " I shouted at him with tears flowing down my eyes.

" Oh shut up you orphan bitch, don't fucking ever raise your voice at me and after this lesson, if you want more, I have many other men like him," he said laughing at me

"You. You are the one behind it." I questioned him in a whisper.

He laughed loudly and bent down to my level and clutched my chin in his thumb and index finger.

"Oh, honey. You are so slow. No wonder you never got to know about my plan before." He chuckled.

I grabbed his hand and pushed it from me, suddenly feeling more disgusting than ever.

I can't believe that I gave my heart to someone like him. He doesn't deserve any love from me and my child.

"Why did you do that?" I asked him with teary eyes.

He hummed for a few seconds and acted like he was thinking of an explanation behind his vile action.

He then cocked his head to the side and smirked "Maybe because you had complained about me to the police."

My eyes widened and I gasped when I heard his reason. How could he do something like this with me just because of a petty issue?

"What did you think that I won't get to know about this?" He questioned.

Then he grabbed the back of my neck and yanked it toward him and sneered "I am Liam Knights. Nothing hides from me."

He then left me with a jerk and stood up. He was about to leave when I asked the question which had been running on my mind.

"What was my mistake? Have I done something wrong other than loving you?" I asked him.

He turned back and looked at me. I didn't stop there and questioned.

"I loved you with my heart. But never in my nightmare, I thought that you would get me raped."

With trembling lips, I continued "You knew about my fear. You knew that I hated being forced. Still, you did that with me. You let someone else rape me."

I put my hand protectively on my belly and said "I am pregnant and still you did that. What if it was your sister in my place."

I felt a hard slap on my face as soon as those words left my lips. My head banged toward the wall due to its force.

I placed my hand on my cheek and turned to look at him. His eyes were red and filled with hate.

He fisted my hair in his hand making me whimper. He leaned his head toward me and jerked my face toward him.

"My sister is not a slut like you. You are a whore who spread her legs for everyone. As soon as I left you, you found someone else's dick to satisfy you." He sneered.

Then he chuckled and with a revolted expression, said "Don't you dare compare my sister with something like you."

He left my hair and seethed "You are nothing but filth. You have no class. You are a bastard and you always will be."

His every single word was breaking my pride, my heart, my self-esteem, and me.

"The last warning to you. Don't you dare complain about me to anyone else or I swear to god, I will kill you along with your bastard baby" He stated with a hard voice.

I found myself nodding because I knew that he was serious. That he could kill me and my baby.

He then glanced at the man who had raped me and asked "Was she any good?"

And at that moment, I wanted to die. I hated when that person glanced at me with those lusty pair of orbs.

I rubbed my stomach when I felt a jolt of pain again. I just wanted them to go so that I could go home too.

Tears were continuously flowing from my eyes. They were not stopping for even a single second.

"She was tight." The person answered him.

A sob left my mouth before I could stop it. He ruined me. He broke me.

"One last thing Nat, stay away from that fucker, or I will make him beg on the streets." He spoke angrily.

"You will be a good girl right?" He asked me with an arched eyebrow.

I nodded my head quickly because I wanted him gone. He snorted then raked his fingers on his wet hair and walked toward his car.

The person left quickly and Liam sat inside his car and before leaving, he turned to me and said "Be a good girl"

With that he left, leaving me alone on this lonely and rainy night.

I tilted my head toward the sky and stared at clouds. The rain was falling on me along with that my tears were also falling.

I didn't know how much time I had spent there alone, sitting in an alley.

I was now shivering and sneezing. I have to get up and leave before I could harm my baby.

I had heard that cold is not good for babies. I could cry on my fate later but right now I have to get up.

I took the support of the wall and after a struggle of a few minutes, I finally stood.

I adjusted my clothes and clutched my wet Jacket close to me. I whimpered when I took a step ahead to walk.

This pain reminded me of my first time but right now it's more painful as my stomach is also hurting.

What if my baby got hurt somehow? I suddenly remembered that Scott had told me to avoid having sex.

I wept while thinking about the consequences. But now I can't go there.

I have to avoid him because I don't want to die. And I also don't want him in this mess.

He is a good person. He doesn't deserve it. I will avoid him and won't talk to him from now on.

Somehow I reached my apartment and I was glad that I didn't meet anyone on my way.

I unlocked my door and walked inside. I didn't turn on the light and straight-headed toward my room.

I opened the door of the bathroom and stripped my clothes off. I turned on the shower and sat on the floor.

I covered my face with my hands and sobbed about my condition. I hate my destiny. It's so cruel.

Why does everyone have a good fate but not me? Why is everyone enjoying their life and not me?

Why does everyone have their parents and not me? Why is everyone happy while I am crying?

I wept hard as a result my eyes are hurting and my head is aching. I sniffled and dried my tears away.

I stood up carefully and saw a pool of blood under me. I turned off the shower and grabbed a small mirror.

I sat on the toilet lid and opened my legs as far as I could because of my belly and looked in the mirror.

I had been ripped open a centimeter. I sighed and put the mirror back. It happened, now I should not cry over it.

It will heal on its own. I looked at my face in the mirror and cringed.

There was a cut on my lip due to the hit I had gotten on my face. It was now dried and had stopped bleeding.

My cheeks were red and it would bruise in the morning. However, the wound on my head didn't stop bleeding.

Again after rubbing my tears away, I cleaned the wound with an antiseptic and put a band-aid on it.

I wore a loose PJ on my wet body because I didn't have the energy to dry it and walked out of the bathroom.

My phone pinged and I looked at and saw 5 missed calls from Kelly and 3 from Scott.

I ignored both. I won't tell anyone. I'll take this secret to my grave with me.

I lied down on the bed after messaging that I won't be able to come to the restaurant the next day.

But sleep was nowhere in my eyes. Although my eyes and head were hurting, I just couldn't sleep.

I tried to close my eyes but every time the scene of me getting raped kept repeating in my head.

I can't tell anyone about it and the cops are not going to help me either.

And that time I understand that I am now on my own. Alone. No one could help me.

I'm just hoping Liam doesn't get me raped again. I don't think I would be able to survive it.

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it.

So yeah Liam is an asshole.

This is just starting. I am planning to make you cry a lot.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOW

Till then

Chapter 24

Natasha POV

It was dawn. But still, I was wide awake, lying on my side and watching outside the window.

I should be sleeping right now, but I am afraid. What if he again came with other men and let them rape me.

I shuddered at that thought and sniffled. My nose was blocked due to constant crying.

I had soaked my pillow with my tears of grief and betrayal. But still, they aren't stopping.

I wanted someone to comfort me right now. I am feeling so alone.

I needed my mother to be here with me so that she could hide me in her arms.

If my father was here then he would have saved me. He might have killed Liam and that guy.

But that's a dream. I don't have anyone. I should have gotten used to it.

I winced when I felt a strong kick on my stomach and I touched my stomach and rubbed it.

This was the first time I had spent my night without sleeping. I could sleep anytime I want without any problem.

I finally sat up when I couldn't fight sleep. If I slept then those nightmares would haunt me.

I got out of bed and walked toward the window. I sat on the window seat and stared outside.

It was very chilly so I grabbed my shawl and covered myself with it. I leaned my head toward the window.

OBJ

And without my permission, tears again started to roll down my cheeks.

I covered my mouth with my palm to muffle the cries of my suffering.

Why did it happen to me? Had I done something wrong? Had I given a signal to Liam that it is okay for him to do that with me?

I had never done anything with anyone. I haven't hurt anyone since my childhood.

I always had tried to be a good girl so that no one could question my character.

Then why did it happen with me? Maybe it was my mistake. I shouldn't have slept with him.

He must have thought that I am a slut who does that with everyone. It was my mistake.

I will stay away from every male from now on. I have to forget about this event somehow.

The last time when someone tried to force me, I had suffered from panic attacks.

And now that I'm pregnant, I couldn't take the risk. I have to listen to Liam because I know that he would kill me and Scarlett.

I will stay away from everyone and will avoid Scott too.

With that thought, I dozed off.

.

.

.

I was cooking dinner when the doorbell rang. I froze for a few seconds and snapped out of it when I heard another bell.

I wiped my hands from the cloth and straightened my clothes. I was wearing my PJs as I was at home.

My hair was tangled and was in a messy bun. There was no need for me to get ready now as I had left that job.

I couldn't imagine going to that club and passed that alley where I was assaulted.

So a week ago, I called there and told them that I was resigning. Surprisingly, they accepted it without any hesitation.

So now I am only working in that restaurant. It was okay for now as I had saved some money.

I would utilize the money I had saved for the college classes. I don't think I would be able to continue my studies ever.

I snapped out of my thoughts when someone banged on the door instead of buzzing the bell.

I walked near the door and peeked through the peephole. I was indeed shocked when I saw that it was Officer Seth.

I bit my lips and pondered about opening the door or not. I had to open it when I heard "Open the door, Miss."

I took a deep breath and opened the door. I saw that it was only him and his partner was not there.

He arched his eyebrow and gestured to me to let him in. When I didn't let him, he said "I have to talk about the case."

I sighed and stood at one side and let him enter the apartment.

I closed the door and saw that he had already taken a seat and his face had an excited expression.

I scrunched my eyebrow in dread and stepped slowly toward him. I sat on the opposite couch nervously.

"What do you have to say?" I asked him straightforwardly.

He chuckled in amusement and I wondered what had I said that made him amused.

He muttered something under his breath which I couldn't catch.

With confusion, I asked, "What did you just say?"

He cleared his throat and said "Nothing. I just wanted to tell you that your allegations were wrong."

I gaped at him in shock and asked "What do you mean? I had given you all evidence."

He leaned forward and said "Miss, I had inquired about it and we have got to know that you had called Mr. Liam Knights here. He didn't do anything wrong. You had falsely accused him to get more money out of him."

"You are lying" I hissed while trying to be brave.

In reality, my hands were shivering and I was about to cry. But I won't give him this satisfaction.

He shook his head and further continued "I'm not lying Miss. I had talked to Mr. Knight and he had told me that you were his whore. And when you get knocked up, you try to get more money out of him."

I licked my dry lips and blinked my eyes rapidly to avoid breaking in front of that corrupt cop.

He continued "Mr. Knights had filed a case against you but he knew that you are pregnant so he doesn't want you to go to prison."

He stood up and stepped inside my personal space which made me uncomfortable.

He bent down in front of me and said "but according to the law you have to pay a fine as you had tried to defame a famous person."

He moved his hand toward me and put his palm on my face and caressed my cheek.

"But you don't have to pay anything if you pleased me." He said with a hoarse voice.

I jerked his hand away from me and saw that his eyes were on looking at his crotch.

"Stay away," I shouted and pushed him away from me in disgust.

He laughed and said, "It shouldn't be difficult for you as you are a whore who could do anything for money."

I grabbed my phone and yelled "I am dialing 911 if you didn't stop talking nonsense. Get out of my house."

He looked like he wanted to kill me but then he may have decided to listen to my threat.

Because he took some steps back and walked toward the door not before saying

"I'll send the notice here. Pay it as soon as possible or you will be in prison."

With that, he left. I closed and locked the door as soon as he left. I slid down on the floor and shouted.

I clutched my hair and sobbed hard. I am tired of this. I am tired of him playing with my life.

Why won't he just leave me alone and let me live my life?

I am not a whore. I am not a whore that was what I was repeating in my head.

I knew that I was not a whore then why would he make me one in front of everyone?

.

.

.

I must have dozed off on the floor after my break down.

My neck was aching due to my uncomfortable position. I saw that I was lying on the floor in a fetus position.

I frowned and rubbed my hands which were cold. I saw that it was still night time.

I sighed and tried to get up from the floor. It was a lot more difficult than I had thought.

I won't sit on the floor ever. Finally, I got up and went to the kitchen. It was a good thing that I had turned off the flame.

I picked up my mobile and saw that it was 9 at night. I can't believe I had slept for 2 hours in that awkward position.

I put the dish on the flame and again started to cook. It was done after 10 minutes.

I put it on a plate and ate it quickly. I washed it and was about to head toward my room when the doorbell again rang.

I got scared when I thought that it could be Liam or that disgusting cop.

My hands were shivering when I sauntered toward the door.

Before I could peek through the peephole, I heard a voice that I didn't hear in one week or tried to avoid it.

"Tasha, open the door. I won't go away from here."

!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it.

So yeah that cop was bad.

And who do you think knocked on her door?

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 25

Natasha POV

I could hear the thundering of my heart. It was beating loudly and was making me anxious.

Why did Scott come here? He shouldn't have come here. What if Liam got to know about it?

"Please open the door, Tasha. I just want to talk." I could hear his sad voice behind the door.

I felt guilty for doing this. I never wanted to ignore him or make him feel sad.

I sighed and opened the door. As soon as I opened it, I was engulfed in a warm embrace.

I flinched from his touch but I think he didn't feel that. I wanted to push him away from me but I just couldn't do that.

Surprisingly I felt safe in his embrace. Something I haven't felt ever. Not even with Liam.

"Tasha, are you okay? Is Scarlett okay? I was so worried. Why weren't you attending my calls?" He fired all those questions at me

He pulled back and I just stayed silent and stared at him. Should I tell him or not?

I was confused and I didn't know what to do. He gently put his hands on my shoulder and shook me gently.

"Tasha, why are you crying?" He asked me gently

He wiped my tears with his thumb which I didn't know was flowing.

"I. I am sorry" I sobbed

I am getting all hormonal due to pregnancy and I wanted to share my pain with someone.

I didn't call Kelly because she is busy with her studies and I don't want to distract her.

She had always supported me and in return, all I had given her was tension.

But now I don't want to do that. I should let her enjoy her life. I shouldn't disturb her anymore.

"Please stop crying, Tasha. You are scaring me. Come sit." He spoke gently

He led me toward the couch and made me sit then took a seat beside me.

"What happened to your face?" He gestured toward the bruise on my face which had almost faded.

When I didn't reply he questioned further "Did that man hurt you?"

I wiped my tears and raised my head to look at him and asked "Scott you had never asked me about Scarlett's father?"

He licked his lips and opened his mouth to say something and then again closed it.

He then turned his head away from me and whispered "I never wanted you to feel uncomfortable around me."

I chuckled sadly and said, "You are a nice guy."

He gazed at me with a smile and said "I am glad you think that."

"Scott, the person who was here that night is Scarlett's father," I confessed with a sigh.

He looked at me with a shocked look and then his face went blank. Now I couldn't tell what he was thinking.

"I met him last year or most likely bumped into him. He was sweet at first and after that, we met almost daily." I started with a bitter smile.

"After a few days, he asked me for a date and like a fool I was, I accepted. I said yes to him. After that, he took me on a date for almost 6 months. He was the sweetest man and I fell for him."

My lips curled into a small smile when I thought about those days. They were the best day of my life.

"I mean how could I stop myself from falling for him. He was amazing. He had told me that he was an orphan too and worked in Knights corporation."

I sighed when I thought about his lies and continued.

"He took me into a forest for a date where he gave me a promise ring and told me that he would marry me in the future."

A sad chuckle left my lips when his words rang into my mind.

"There was a camp in the forest and he brought me there. He told me that he loved me and he wanted to show it by making love with me."

Two big drops of tear fell from my eyes and I looked down to avoid looking at him.

"He had sex with me then we fell asleep. When I woke up, he was gone. Just like that leaving me in the middle of nowhere. I didn't even know the location of that forest. I called him but he didn't pick up the call. Somehow I walked more like limped to my home."

I sniffled and fiddled with the hem of my sweater. I don't have any courage to face him, so I kept my face down.

"He never answered my calls and then I finally told everything to kelly. She told me that he must have done all that to have sex with me."

"I was heartbroken. I couldn't believe that he did that with me. He played with me and my emotions."

I was sobbing now and I felt arms around me. He hugged me close to him and I put my head on his chest.

After a few minutes, I finally stopped sobbing then I proceeded but didn't remove my head from his chest.

"After 2 months, I found out that I was pregnant. I didn't have any clue and knowledge regarding this as I have no one. But still, I never wanted to abort the baby. Kelly instructed me to talk about it to him."

"I went to his office and got to know that he was Liam Knights, CEO of Knights corporation. He had lied to me. There he humiliated me in front of his entire staff by throwing a check on my face for the payment of that night and told me that 'I didn't deserve more as I hadn't satisfied him enough.'"

He tightened his grip on me and I knew that he was angry. He might be thinking that I am a slut.

That thought saddened me but it's good for him. He should stay away from me as I am no good for anyone.

"He called me a bastard child and said that my baby is also a bastard child. He called his child a bastard. How could he do that Scott?"

I wondered this question many times and still, the answer is always a mystery for me.

"After that, he threatened me that I wouldn't like the consequences if I told anyone about this. I got scared so I said yes."

I removed my head from his chest and looked at his face. His eyes were sad and he was looking..... heartbroken.

"That was the first time I saw him in months. He was at the restaurant with his fiancee. He is now going to be married but still, he isn't leaving me alone."

I put my hands on my hair and pulled it slightly. The next part is going to be quite difficult as I didn't tell this to anyone.

I must be silent for some time, lost in my thoughts because he asked me "What happened next?"

I looked at him with painful eyes and whispered "Last week when I was raped."

His eyes widened and he was stunned. I knew he wanted me to continue but he didn't say anything.

"I was coming back when a man caught me and then he raped me. I pleaded and did everything in my power to save me but I couldn't. And it was Liam who told that man to rape me. "

I finally confessed to him and told him about the incident. I am feeling lighter than before.

Now the heavy burden is off my shoulder and I could finally breathe.

"You never told me about this, Tasha." He asked in a sad whisper.

I turned toward him and saw the immense sadness in his eyes which matched mine.

"I am sorry Scott. I shouldn't tell you this. He had warned me to stay away from you. He threatened to kill me and Scarlett and you also. I don't want anything to happen to you."

I sighed when I finally let it all out. He shook his head and said "I can save myself. You should complain about it."

I shuddered when I remembered Officer Seth. I shook my head and said "No police"

He looked at me bewildered then I continued "he knew about the cop and that's why he gave me that punishment. I don't want to complain about it anymore."

I mused about his warning then said "And that officer was unethical. He had said that all my allegations were wrong and now I have to pay the fine for trying to defame him."

He cupped my cheeks and said "You don't have to worry, Tasha. I'll handle everything and the bastard will pay. You aren't going to stay here anymore. You are staying with me and mom."

I shook my head and said "No I won't go anywhere. And I don't want you to meet me anymore."

I removed his hands from my face and stood up. I took some steps back, creating some distance between us.

"Considered it as our last meeting. You should forget about me and it's not that difficult." I told him with a serious voice.

He looked angry for some seconds and took some steps toward me and said "I can't stay away from you, Tasha. Because I love you."

I gasped and gawked at him. I don't know how many minutes had passed but I found him leaning toward me.

And in the next second, his soft lips were on mine, caressing it with love and affection.

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it.

They kissed *squealing*

So how was the chapter?

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 26

Natasha POV

For some seconds, I was surprised and I didn't know what to do.

Should I push him? Or should I kiss him back? These questions were roaming in my head, making me baffled.

I got over that shock when he pulled back. I looked at his face and he seemed.... happy.

His face had much emotion like happiness, contentment, relief, and on the other hand, I had no impression on my face.

I was very confused and I don't know how to talk to him after that awkward moment.

I have never felt that he had that kind of feeling for me. Maybe because I was so lost in my grief that I had ignored his feelings.

"I... " I started to say something but couldn't utter a single word.

"I am sorry, Tasha. I shouldn't have kissed you like that. I know you are hurting and I just, I am sorry." He apologized with a sigh.

He then stared into my eyes and said "I love you, Natasha. I fell for you when I saw you for the first time. You were looking so afraid and confused. I felt an immense need to protect you from everyone."

I bit my lips to stop myself from breaking his heart. I know how it felt when your heart got broken.

And I don't want that for him. He doesn't deserve that pain and he doesn't deserve someone like me.

"It's okay. I know you are scared right now. I will never force you, Tasha. You can take all the time you want. I am here for you." He whispered with a small smile.

I shook my head while trying to stop myself from crying, I said "I am sorry."

A sob left my lips and I continued "I don't have any feeling for you. I always considered you my friend. I am sorry."

I wanted to hate myself when I saw the painful expression on his face. He was looking just like I was. Heartbroken.

"Just give me a chance. I will never let you regret your decision, Tasha. I understand that you are scared, but please don't shut me out." He pleaded

He took a step toward me and stood very close to me and put his hand on my stomach.

Scarlett chose that moment to let her presence known. She kicked softly when she felt his hand on my stomach.

"If it's about Scarlett, then I promise you that I will take care of her too. I am ready to be her father. I will never let her know or feel that she isn't my daughter." He said softly while caressing my belly.

I sobbed hard when I heard his words. He is so sweet but I am not the right one for him.

He doesn't deserve a damaged girl who couldn't even save herself from someone.

He deserves a girl who is pure and not shattered. I am a damaged soul who has no idea what to do next in her life.

And there is Liam too. He had warned me to stay away from him.

I had underestimated him last time and as a result, I got raped. So this time I don't want to mess with him.

Scott doesn't love me. He is just infatuated with me. No one can love me.

I am cursed. Love is not in my destiny. I'm getting used to that fact.

I have a feeling that in the future, my Scarlet will not love me too.

I felt uncomfortable when I thought about that. I don't think I will be able to handle that.

But I won't stop her from living her life and will never stop loving her.

I will be there for her as long as she wants me. After that, I will accept death with open arms.

I can't say yes to him. He deserves better and after meeting the girl, he will forget me.

"I am sorry. I can't love anyone. Scott, I am damaged and cursed. You will never find your happiness with me. I will ruin you. I don't want that. You have been a good friend but now I think we should stop meeting each other." I confessed with a heavy heart.

I took a step back and his hand fell from my stomach making me feel empty.

But it's for his good. He should get a better partner. The one who will love him.

"Scott, I am not one for you. You will find someone who will love you the way you deserve." I let out a sob.

I turned my face to the side, not wanting to see his heartbroken expression.

"You should go. And please don't visit here again." I announced.

I felt his soft hands on my cheeks and he turned my face toward him, making me face him.

He leaned his forehead to mine and I closed my eyes. I felt tears on my cheeks but this time it was not mine.

I felt like a bitch for breaking his heart. But what can I do? My heart is broken too.

I need to heal myself before thinking about loving someone again.

I know I am being cruel but I don't want to give him false hope that in the future I will love him.

"I am here for you, Tasha. Remember that. I am only one call behind." He muttered

With tears falling down my eyes, I said "I won't call you ever. You have to stop thinking about me."

I pushed him gently and looked dead into his eyes and said "Scott you should leave and never turn back. You should find a nice girl who will return your love."

He was about to cut me off but I showed him my palm and continued "You will forget about me when you meet her. Believe me, I am easy to forget."

I let out a sad chuckle and added "I am tired of all these. I am sorry but I will never be able to love someone."

I took a step back and said "I gave him my heart and he shattered it brutally. He had ruined me for anyone else."

I took another step back "I just wish you would have appeared in my life before him. My life would have been different."

My back hit the wall when I took another step back and now there was a lot of difference between us.

"But now it's too late. I should focus on my life which is my baby. You should focus on your life." I told him with a sigh.

"Leave Scott. Please don't make it hard for me. Let me live my life the way I want to." I pleaded with him

Another tear fell from his eye making me want to wipe it. But I stopped myself because I don't want to get his hopes high.

"As you wish, Tasha. I love you so much. Just remember that." He said and turned back and started to walk toward the door.

He opened the door and turned toward me. He sighed and left the house not before saying 'I love you' for the last time.

I heard the noise of the door slamming shut with a force. And now the apartment is silent just like always.

I took steps toward the couch and slumped down on it. I clutched my hair and pulled it.

I am bad. I'd done a bad deed for the first time and now god will punish me.

I shouldn't have broken his heart. I did the same with him which Liam had done with me.

Now there is no difference between me and him. We both are cruel. I have done a horrible thing.

Today was one of the difficult days of my life. I suffered a lot today.

First that corrupted officer and now this. My eyes were tired due to never-ending crying.

I fell asleep while crying, mourning the loss of the friendship which I had with Scott.

I just hope now I will be able to live in peace without any problems.

But as always my cruel destiny wouldn't let me rest.

I didn't know that the upcoming days are going to be a living nightmare for me.

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So do you think that Natasha had done wrong here?

If yes then think about it from her POV. She just got raped 1 week ago and now she got to know about this.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 27

Natasha POV (7 months pregnant)

If I'd been thinking that my life before this was bad, now, it's horrible.

Sometimes I wanted to run away from my problems instead of facing them.

But sadly I can't do that. I have to face my problems like a big girl.

Two weeks ago, I got the notice from the court that I would have to compensate Liam for defaming him.

My hands started to shiver when I had looked at the amount. It was too much for me.

The amount they have been asking was three fourth of my savings. I had been saving it for Scarlett.

I didn't have any choice other than compensating for the punishment.

If I didn't have paid it, they would have locked me into prison and I don't want that.

Now I have only some savings left which are inadequate to survive and on top of that, I have been working only in a diner.

I have to somehow adjust with these savings and have to find a second job or else I will be on the road after the delivery.

Kelly had called me every day but like a coward, I have been avoiding her calls.

I don't want to impose my problems on her anymore. I am now going to be a mother.

It's high time for me to woman up and face my problems without creating any chaos.

To be honest, I don't want to worry kelly. She has been a constant support for me and I love her for that.

I just can't be selfish and snatch her happiness. I don't want to give her any tension.

I have been dealing with constant nightmares. They are horrible and kept me awake all night.

Scott didn't contact me after that day and I am grateful for that.

I don't want him to jeopardize his happiness for someone like me.

But yeah I have been getting calls from Sophia (Scott's mother). She was missing me and I missed her too.

She had given me the love of a mother which I had been craving. She had shown me that I could be loved too.

But too bad I can't see her again as I had told her that I am leaving this city.

She was upset and had told me to consider it again but I told her that I am going to live with Kelly.

Now they are my past and I have to focus on my present and my future.

"Ughh, just because I am pregnant that doesn't mean you would treat me like a glass. I can carry this bag."

I heard someone's voice in front of me. I raised my gaze toward the source of the voice.

It was a woman who was probably in her mid-20s. She was pregnant and has a cute belly.

She might be in her 4 months. A man was standing beside her and from what I could see, he was her husband or boyfriend.

The man chuckled "I know love. Now move on. You are standing for too long. It's your time to take rest."

The woman rolled her eyes and said whatever.

I looked at myself and thought that it must be nice to have someone beside you especially now as you are pregnant.

I shook my head to get rid of unwanted thoughts. They won't do any good for me.

I walked toward the checkout counter and paid for the groceries.

I had bought groceries which I wanted for two weeks so that I won't have to visit here again.

I took the bag, which was quite heavy for me, and walked out of the grocery store.

I got slammed by the chilly breeze of December as soon as I stepped out of the store.

I licked my lips to get them wet. I started to walk toward my apartment.

I winced when the string of the bag dug into my wrist. The bag was a lot heavy and it was getting difficult to carry it.

I have been getting these cramps since last week. But I didn't tell anyone about it.

I chuckled at those thoughts. It's not like I could tell these to anyone.

I didn't know any other doctor here and I couldn't tell them about it to Scott.

I was passing by a hospital when I stopped dead in my steps.

My nightmare was standing in front of me with another man looking at me with those evil eyes.

My hands started to shake wildly when he took some steps toward me and now he was standing in front of me.

My grip on the bags loosen and it dropped on the ground with a thud.

"I didn't tell anyone. Please don't kill me." Those words came out of my mouth before I could stop them.

He indeed looked shocked for a second. The person, who was with him, was observing me first but after hearing my words he got confused.

I was trembling thinking that he might have brought him here to get me raped again.

"Liam" the person shook Liam who was busy assessing my belly.

Liam shook his head and said, "Not now Adam."

OBJ

[Thank you for suggesting him Ankita]

He was about to touch me but stopped when we all heard a loud and exciting voice calling my name.

"Natasha"

I looked toward the hospital and saw Linda coming out of it at a steady speed.

Something was different with her since the last time I saw her. She was glowing and seemed to gain some weight.

She came toward me and hugged me tightly and kissed my cheek. I smiled at her when she pulled back.

"I can't believe I got to see you again. You are looking beautiful." She praised with a beautiful smile.

"Thank you and you are gorgeous," I replied with a smile.

She grinned and her eyes were glittering in happiness. She was indeed looking delighted.

"I know right. The doctor was saying the same. Wasn't she, Liam?" She asked him

Liam nodded his head and said "yeah"

"Want to know why I went to the hospital? " she asked me but didn't give me any chance to say something.

"I am pregnant." She announced excitedly.

It was then I felt something wrong with me. I heard something shattering inside me which was already broken.

It was my heart who has been through so much but was still beating. It had dealt with a lot worse things and now had to deal with this situation.

She was looking at me with a smile and was waiting for me to say something.

I plastered a fake smile on my face and said "Congratulations."

She must have not seen my face because she said "We are so happy. Liam is so excited that he is going to be a father."

She gave a loving look to him while I gathered all my strength to stop my tears from falling.

So he is happy that he is going to be a father. Why wasn't he when I was pregnant?

'Because you are poor and she is rich.' My inner voice replied to me sadly.

She was right. It was my mistake that I was poor. If I wasn't then maybe Scarlett would have a father with her.

Does it change anything if I was rich? I mean I had heard that love has no caste and religion.

But there has to be love in a relationship. Mine was a hollow one.

"..... Now he wants me to rest. I mean seriously. I am fine but still, no one listens to me. Even Adam sided with him."

I must have zoned out because I didn't hear what she was saying before this.

She is so lucky that she gets to rest in pregnancy. I have been working throughout my pregnancy.

I wanted to rest too. When my back aches more than anything. When I was having a fever or when I have been feeling tired.

Money really matters. Those who have money they would get everything.

And those who don't have, they suffered even without doing any mistake.

"Oh, I forgot to introduce him. He is Adam Thomas. Our best friend. Remember I had told you about him last time." She pointed at the person who was beside them.

So he was Mr. Adam who had ruined Kelly's life. I didn't want to shake my hand with him

But I don't have a choice because he forwarded his hand. So I had to shake hands with him.

"Hello, I am Natasha. It's nice to meet you." I said with a fake smile.

He then introduced himself to me. I wanted to leave as soon as possible as I don't want to be near them anymore.

I looked at my grocery which had spilled out of the bag and was about to bend down to pick it up.

"Let me" I heard Adam's voice as he crouched to pick up the groceries.

I was shocked to see his behavior. From what I had been thinking, I had always imagined him as a cruel-looking person.

He gave me my bag and stood up. I said "Thank you. Now I should get going. It's nice to meet you."

"Let us drop you, Natasha. These bags are looking heavy and you are pregnant. You shouldn't carry those in the first place." Linda told me worriedly.

I smiled at her and said "It's okay. I am habitual to it."

With a shaky smile, I said "Congratulations again. I hope you and your baby will get everything in your life."

As soon as I turned around to go to my home, my tears started to fall which I had been controlling.

I am really happy for Linda. She is a sweet woman and she deserves happiness in this world.

And the words which left my mouth were from my heart. She and her baby are not at fault.

They are good people and I can't be angry with them.

I reached my home and put my bag down in front of my door to take my keys out of my pocket.

I had marks on both of my wrists due to the heavy bag. I rubbed them gently and unlocked my door.

But I got shocked when I saw that the door was unlocked. I gasped when it made a creaking sound.

I was scared while thinking about the intruder. It couldn't be Liam as I had just seen him a few minutes ago.

Then who could be here? I opened the door and saw a person who was sitting on my couch while smoking a cigar.

I can't see his face as the room was filled with darkness. I was about to shout when I heard the most dangerous voice.

"Don't shout and close the door."

!!!

Chapter 28

Natasha POV

My breath stuck in my throat when I listened to the dangerous voice that I had ever heard.

It was filled with authority and darkness which was ordering me to comply with his orders or the consequence would be worse.

With trembling hands, I closed the door and kept the bag down at the side of the door.

I took some steps toward the living area and switched on the lights. Instantly, the room got filled with lights instead of cold darkness.

The man didn't turn his face toward me. He just kept smoking like he hadn't just broken into my house.

"Who are you?" I asked with a slightly raised voice.

I didn't show him that he was scaring me or making me feel like anything. I had enough experience regarding this situation.

That man threw the cigar on the floor making me scrunch my nose at his action.

He stood up from the couch and turned toward me. He was probably in his late 40s.

But he was not looking that much old. I had seen that man somewhere.

His face was familiar to me. I tried very hard to focus on my memory.

The memory hit me like a truck. Now I knew why he looked familiar to me and where I had seen him.

He is James Knights, Liam's father. I had got a glimpse of him when I saw the news regarding Liam's marriage.

Now I am frightened. What was he doing here? Is that a kind of game for his family?

First son and now his father. I took a step back when he stood in front of me.

I looked at his eyes with fear while he just stared at me blankly. I licked my dry lips and asked "what are you doing here?"

He raised his hand toward me and I flinched thinking that he would hit me.

He just caresses my hair which made me cringe. I hate his touch. I wanted him to take his hand away.

I jerked back and his hand fell. I sighed in relief and told him "Get out of my house before I call the cops."

As soon as I said cops, he chuckled. It sent shivers down my spine. I shuddered when I heard his words.

"Go ahead and call the cops. Let's see what happens."

The smirk on his face was telling me everything I needed to know. He must have known about that corrupt officer.

"Now if you are done being a child, let's move on. I don't have any time to waste on you." He spoke nonchalantly

He is saying these words as if I had invited him to my house to ask for some favors from him.

"I am James Knights." He said while looking into my eyes then continued "Liam's father."

I gulped in frustration. I am helpless here. Everyone comes to my house without my permission and does whatever they like.

I can't do anything about it. I can't complain about it to cops as they all are corrupted and Liam would get to know about it.

I can't tell Kelly as I don't want to disturb her or put her into some problems.

I can't tell Scott as I had broken my friendship with him and had lied to his mother that I have left the state.

As a result, I am all alone. I am right now in a vulnerable condition where I can't do anything.

If I wanted to save myself from Liam then I have to listen to all of them.

"Liam had told me about his little whore. He had told me that he knocked you up." He smirked

I didn't say anything. I was silent. It's not like I didn't hear it from someone else.

They all had addressed me as his whore and even Liam had done that too.

And to be honest, I am tired of explaining myself to everyone. I am now just ignoring their nonsense.

"Stay away from my son. I don't want to see you anywhere near him. He is now going to get married to his love and his fiance is pregnant. The least he wanted in his life is a headache." He asserted.

"Maybe he didn't pay you enough. I am ready to pay you more if you want. But stay away from their life or I will ruin you." He threatened me.

"You are an orphan and have no one. No one would find you if you die. They won't even get to know about it. Do a favor for yourself and your child. Don't interfere in his life." He remarked with a raised eyebrow.

I did what I thought that I would never do. I laughed at him. Loudly and sarcastically.

The cold look that he had masked fell for a few seconds but he composed himself quickly.

"Why does he think that everything revolves around him and his family. You guys aren't that special. You are humans too but you never considered the person standing in front of you a living being." I said courageously.

"I was not the one who was running behind him. He was the one who was behind me and still is." I informed him.

"Silence. You are crossing your limit, girl. You have created a lot of chaos in my family and I won't tolerate it anymore." He seethed

I took a step back in fear when he stepped into my private place.

"Leave from my house. You and your son are not welcomed here." I warned him.

"You are nothing in front of me, you whore. If I want, I can get you killed and no one would blame me." He hissed

But after that, he took a step back and with a smirk said "But I won't do that. Live your life till you can."

"I will ruin everyone who dares to mess with my family. Liam is my only son so I could do everything for him." He said with a poker face.

Without saying anything, he walked toward the door and opened it.

"Live till you can Natasha." He said and went outside.

I walked toward the door and closed it. I made sure to lock it even though they all had keys to my house.

I sighed and walked toward my room without making my dinner. I am tired right now and the food is the last thing in my mind.

I laid down on my bed and started to think about the day. It was another rollercoaster ride for me.

I got to know that Linda is pregnant with Liam's child. I sighed and stared ahead of me.

There is a lot of difference between Linda and me. First is she is rich and I am not.

She is so beautiful and gorgeous and I am average. I barely got any time to rest so I didn't pamper myself.

She has everything I wanted and craved. A family, friends, and a loving fiance.

She has a nice job and she is educated while I am just a waitress as Liam had addressed and only a high school graduate.

She is getting all the rest she wanted to in her pregnancy whereas I have to do a hardworking job.

So that I and my daughter won't end up on the streets after delivery.

Whatever money I had stored went into the drain. Liam had snatched whatever I had.

I didn't know when my tears started to fall. All I did in my life was cry.

Pregnancy should be a nice period in a woman's life. But it seems like I am not included in that category.

I have been crying throughout my pregnancy and I am tired of it.

I wanted it to end so that I could enjoy this period with a smile.

I want to be loved. But it looks like I am asking for something which is not in my destiny.

In Cruel Destiny.

!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it.

So what do you think about his father?

He is quite dangerous.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 29

LIAM WILL BE PUNISHED. AND READ THE STORY TILL THE END.

Natasha POV

Have you ever felt like God hates you so much that he wanted you to suffer?

I am feeling like this right now. It's like every door is closed for me and I have nowhere to go.

Last night after Liam's father's visit, I didn't know that the next morning would be torture for me.

I went to the restaurant as always but this time something felt wrong.

My stomach clenched in nervousness but still, I went inside and saw the owner and his wife arguing.

I stepped toward them and asked "What happened? Is everything alright?"

For the first time, I have seen hate and anger in Mr. Cameron's wife (Owner's wife).

I was taken aback when I saw it. She has always been good to me. So what happened now?

She just clenched her jaw and turned toward her husband and said "Do it otherwise we will be homeless."

She then glared at me and said "You are fired."

My jaw was on the floor when I heard those from her mouth. She has just fired me but why?

"But why?" I asked her bewildered

"It's nothing, Natasha. You go inside. No one is firing you." Mr. Cameron said

"No" His wife shouted "You are not thinking clearly. Just fired her or I will leave you."

"Would you mind telling me what happened?" I asked them wearily

"Mr. Knights called and told us to fire you or else he would take over our restaurant." His wife sighed.

I was shocked because I didn't know that Liam would do something like that.

I thought that maybe he would leave me alone after that night if I fulfilled his wishes.

But no he still isn't leaving me. I looked at Mr. Cameron's face. He was looking tense and I caught the glimpse of fear in it.

He had done a lot for me. He had sheltered me in his home when I was homeless and was on the roads.

He is very old and this restaurant is the only source of his and his family's income.

Even though it's mine too but maybe I can find another job. I have to repay their gratitude.

"Ok. I'll leave. Tell Mr. Knights that I won't come here again." I whispered in a heavy voice

I turned my back and took a step toward the door when I heard Mr. Cameron's voice.

"You are not leaving Natasha. It's the only job you have."

I wiped the lone tear which fell from my eyes and turned back to face them.

I gave them a small smile and said "I know but I'll be alright. I don't want to be selfish here. You have done a lot for me. It's time for me to pay you back."

"But how will you manage as you are pregnant?" He questioned me with concern.

I opened my mouth but I was cut off by his wife "the father of her child will take care of them."

I wanted to laugh as well as cry after hearing her words. Liam would take care of me and my baby?

He won't do shit. He just knows how to mess with someone's life.

I really don't know what happened to her. The reason behind her behavior is a mystery to me

She has changed a lot. She was not like this. She had been polite with me but that stopped when I got pregnant.

Maybe she thinks that I had become a whore. Or worse. I just shrugged and said, "I'll take care of myself."

I turned back and walked outside. I took a deep breath and shuddered when the cold breeze hit me.

I only had this job but not anymore. I sat on the bench in the park and stared at the children who were enjoying the snow.

The snow has been falling since morning making the surroundings colder than before.

I have never thought that I would see this day. I looked above at the sky and sighed when a snowflake fell on my red cheek.

Had it been some other time, I would probably be enjoying it as I love snowfall.

But now I can't. I am now jobless and I have to find a job quickly or it will be very bad.

I wish I could call Kelly and share with her my problems. But I just can't.

Why are you doing this with me, Liam? Why?

.

.

.

1 month later [8 months Pregnant]

My stomach has been grumbling but I tried to ignore it.

I went toward the kitchen in the hope to find something to eat. Like I have been doing for the three days.

But there was nothing. I wiped my tears of hunger. I haven't eaten anything for the last three days.

I have no money to buy anything. I had paid the rent of the apartment out of my savings.

And now I haven't had a single penny to buy anything to eat.

My Scarlett was hungry too and she has stopped moving lately. I am worried about her too.

But I can't do anything. I can't even go to any hospital due to money problems.

It's her father's fault who was destroying us and making us suffer.

After that day, I had wandered almost all places in the city to find a job but no one had given me the work yet.

I am still searching for a job. I have even told them I am ready to clean dishes or to work as a janitor.

I just need a job to earn money. It was Liam who had given the order to all places in this city to not let me work.

I had heard it from one person when I turned my back to go home.

He had said 'She needs work but I can't do anything. If I did then Mr. Knights will kill me.'

I stepped inside my room and laid down on the bed and curled my body into a fetal position and wept.

I might have fallen asleep because I woke up when I heard banging on my front door.

I frowned and wiped my tears. I sniffled and got out of bed.

I waddled toward the door and peeked at the peephole and wondered why he was here.

The landlord of the building was here and he was not alone. There were 2 men with him.

I opened the door and he greeted me with a sad smile. I bit my lip and asked "Hello. What happened?"

I was confused about his visit. It's not the time to pay rent yet and it's not outstanding.

He took a deep breath and said "Ms. Natasha you have to vacate this apartment right now."

I gasped when I heard his words. He was kicking me out of this apartment but why?

"But why? I have been paying my rent on time. Then why?" I questioned him nervously.

"This apartment has been sold. It was Mr. Knights who had bought this. I am sorry but you have to leave." He told me.

Again. He did that again. He snatched the last basic necessity from me.

I had no food and money but now I won't have any roof over my head too.

"At least give me some time. Where will I go? Please try to understand." I pleaded with him.

The tears of frustration and helplessness filled my eyes but I tried my best not to let them out.

He shook his head and said "I can't do anything. You have to pack right now."

My shoulder slumped with defeat. I can't do anything about this now. I have to go and pack.

I turned back to the room and packed my clothes. I don't have any other belongings with me.

The furniture and the stuff were included with the apartment. Nothing was mine here.

I wore a thick jacket over my hoodie and leggings to keep me warm from the cold.

It was a sunny day but now the clouds are covering the sky.

But I don't want to take any chances as I didn't know how much I have to spend my days out of here on the streets.

I don't even know where I am going to stay. Do I have to sleep on the streets?

Without saying anything to him other than giving him a sad look, I walked out.

The chilly wind greeted me, making me shiver in the cold. I licked my dry lips.

I really don't know where to go. I have no one in this city. Kelly is not here too.

And about Scott, I bit my lips when I thought about him. I have told him that I would never call him so I shouldn't do this now.

I had enough now. I want someone with me. I am tired of this. I am alone.

I put my hand on my swollen stomach and caressed it. I got rewarded by a faint kick.

It was almost nothing but I am happy that she had responded to me after so many days.

I am a very irresponsible and selfish mother who couldn't even feed her child and get necessary checkups for her.

"I am sorry Scarlett. Forgive your mother, baby. I will arrange food for us soon. Don't worry." I whispered to her.

I walked a little while dragging my suitcase toward the park. I sat on it and took a deep breath.

My phone bill is due and if I didn't pay it they will stop it soon.

I dialed the number of one person who would help me. She will never abandon me.

The person immediately picked up the call and I whispered.

"Hi, Kelly."

!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it.

So yeah the story is about to end.

So what do you think about this chapter?

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 30

Natasha POV

"Naty"

Her word was laced in concern for me. The way she called my name had proved that she was indeed worried for me.

"I am sorry" I whispered

"Oh God, Naty. Are you okay? You haven't called me in ages. I was so worried about you. Do you have any idea how much I have wanted to come there and scold you?" She fired all her questions at me.

And in the end, she started to cry. My tears, which has never stopped since I met Liam, also started to fall.

"I am so sorry Kelly. Please forgive me. I have never wanted you to get worried about me. You have your life that's why I have not been disturbing you." I apologized to her.

I could hear her sigh from the other end. She sniffled "It's okay. Tell me how you are."

I took a deep breath and blurted out "Kelly, I am not fine. I was raped last month."

"Naty" she whispered in surprise.

"I was coming back from the club. But someone grabbed me from behind. I was pleading to him but he didn't stop Kelly. He never did no matter how many times I had pleaded."

"It was not the worst part. Wanna know who was behind it. Liam. He is the one who had ordered that man to rape me."

"What? Why would that bastard do that? I will kill him." She roared in anger

A sad smile curled on my lips despite the tears which have been falling.

"He punished me because I had complained about him to the authorities. He had been coming into my apartment without my permission and always threatening me. "

"He had ordered me to stay away from Scott or else he would kill him. And if I ever told this to anyone then he would kill me and Scarlett."

I was now sobbing quietly. I was not in the confinement of my apartment anymore.

"Why didn't you tell me, Naty? I would have helped. It's my fault that I didn't check on you. I am really a bad friend. I am sorry." She cried.

I shook my head as if she could see me and said "Don't blame yourself. It's not your fault."

Then I continued "Kelly he told Mr. Cameron to kick me out of that job or else he would take their restaurant from them."

"Not only this he had told everyone to not give me any job. I have been jobless since that time."

"Kelly today he bought the apartment where I was staying. They kicked me out of there."

I put my hand on my mouth to stifle my sobs. I am embarrassed because I have to ask for her help.

Everyone blames me that I have befriended her because of her money.

Even her parents think that. That's the reason I have never asked for her help till now.

Now I don't care about my dignity because the life of my child is my priority.

I would never be able to forgive myself if something happened to my Scarlett because of me.

And now I have no one here. I will not get any job here because of Liam.

So it's better to leave this city and start a fresh life with my daughter.

"Will you help me, Kelly? I have nowhere to go and I don't have any job right now. Can I come and stay with you?" I asked her with shame.

I was feeling very ashamed to ask for somebody's help. I have never done that before

"I promise that I will pay your money as soon as I find a job and I will pay you the rent too. I..."

I was cut off by a very angry voice which was filled with betrayal and sadness.

"How could you do that Naty? How could you think that I won't help you? I had asked you to come and stay with me before we even become friends."

I wanted to say something but she didn't let me. I wanted to apologize as I had hurt her.

"You are coming here as soon as possible. And don't even think about paying me something. You are not a friend. You are my sister. I just can't believe that you are thinking that I would take any money from you."

I was so glad to have her as my best friend. I wiped my tears suddenly feeling lightweight.

"I am sorry. I never wanted you to feel like that." I answered.

"It's okay hun. Wipe your tears you shouldn't cry anymore. I'll kill that bastard when I see him." She chuckled sadly.

"Kelly, Linda is pregnant with his child. " I confessed the thing which was making me sad.

"What was my fault? I have only given him my unconditional love. I know I might not have satisfied him that night but I have never thought that sex is the footing of a relationship."

"My child is going to be born without a father while her baby will have one. Was it my mistake that I was born poor?" I questioned.

I have been trying to find all the answers but I have no answers.

"Naty, don't you dare blame yourself. You are not at fault. It's his mistake that he couldn't keep his dick in his pants."

"What if Scarlet will have no father? I will become the best aunt and you will become the best and strong mother she could ever have."

She then took a deep breath and said "do you want me to book a ticket for you?"

"No, don't do that. I'll take the bus. I am near the bus station anyway." I lied

I was far away from the bus station. I have taken enough help. I can cover the distance by walking.

"Naty" she started but I cut her off and said "Please. You can find a job for me instead."

"You are not going to work. You are staying with me. I'll cover it for you." She said

I bit my lips and said, "I don't want you to waste your parents money."

I shuddered when I remembered the last time I saw her parents. Her mom is dangerous and what she did was a nightmare for me.

"It's not their money, don't worry. I have not been in their contact since last year. I am earning my own money." She told me.

I nodded and said "Okay. I'll reach there by tomorrow morning. Bye, Kelly. I love you."

"I love you too babe. Take care and come soon." She nodded then I cut the call.

I wiped my face clean and my phone beeped. I opened the inbox and found a message from Mr. Cameron.

He wanted me to come and collect some bonus which he is paying to all his staff including the ex one.

I smiled widely and mentally thanked God for this. Now I will have some money to eat and for a bus ticket.

I started to walk toward the restaurant slowly. It was almost dusk.

I was feeling dizzy due to the starvation. But I have to wait for sometime after that I could eat something.

It took me 1 hour to reach the restaurant as I had to sit in between my walk.

I opened the door and the aroma of the delicious food hit my nostril making my stomach grumble.

My face turned red in embarrassment but thank God no one had noticed it.

I walked inside and a new girl told me to go inside the cabin. I thanked her and went inside.

I knocked on the door and heard him saying 'come in'. I opened the door and saw him sitting on the chair.

But my smile faltered when I saw his wife sitting beside him. I used to be happy whenever I saw her but now it's changed.

I bit my lips and took some steps toward them. He gave me a kind smile and asked "How are you, Natasha?"

I managed to put a smile on my face and said "I am good, sir"

"You are looking skinnier than before. Have you found a job?" He asked me in concern.

I sighed and said "No I haven't found any job. No one is ready to give me any job in this city."

He gave a surprised and sad look then asked "Then how are you managing?"

I shrugged "I had some savings but now I don't have so I am going to leave this city tonight."

I should have lied but I just couldn't. I have never lied to him because he is the closest person I had as a father figure.

"Natasha I am -" I cut him off and said "Please don't say sorry. You have done enough for me. It was not your mistake. It was destiny's fault."

"Have you had any food?" Mrs. Cameron, who was silent till now, asked me.

"I... I had" I lied to her.

I don't want anyone to know that I haven't eaten anything in 3 days.

She just went outside without saying anything for which I am glad.

Mr. Cameron just sighed and said "I am sorry Natasha. Because of me, you are suffering. I promised you when I met you that I won't disappoint you."

"It's okay. It was in the past. Actually, I have to leave quickly." I told him quickly.

"Oh yeah. Here it is." He handed me an envelope.

I took it from his hand and lifted my head to say thank you.

I felt some happiness that I could have food with this money which will be left after paying for the bus ticket.

"I should get going. I'll see you again, Sir, if I ever come here. Goodbye." I said and left the room.

I was about to leave the restaurant when I heard "Wait Natasha."

I looked back in shock when I saw that it was Mrs. Cameron who had called me.

I covered my surprised face with a smile and said "Yes Ma'am"

She has a plate in her hand which was covered with amazing food which made my stomach rumble.

"I am sorry," I said ashamed.

"No need to be. Come and eat this." She told me and placed the dish on the table.

I shook my head because I don't know how much I had money in that envelope.

And if I ate it then how will I be able to purchase the ticket. Reaching Kelly's place is necessary right now.

"It's on the house." She said when she saw my hesitation.

I gnawed on my lips and finally surrendered when I thought about Scarlett.

She might be hungry and wanted some nutrition which I have not been giving her lately.

I sat at the table and swallowed my pride. Nothing is more important than my baby.

I took one bite of the food and almost moaned when my tastebuds savored the taste of the food.

I quickly ate it and extinguished my hunger. I ate it quickly and almost felt sad when the plates became empty.

But got again happy when one full plate of food was set on my table.

I gave her a 'thank you' smile and ate the food but this time slowly savoring the taste of it.

When I finished it, I sighed in contentment and got up slowly while placing a hand on my belly.

I looked at Mrs. Cameron and said "Thank you, Ma'am, for the food. I should leave now. Goodbye."

She just nodded with no emotions and I walked out of the restaurant, leaving behind the place where I had been working for 4 years.

I sighed walking toward my last destination before leaving this city. I just needed some unanswered explanations.

It wasn't long before I was standing in front of my destination. I have got this address from Linda.

I was standing in front of his house.

!!!

Chapter 31

Natasha POV

Just like I had always imagined, it was a beautiful house. A big fountain was in the middle of the garden where it could be seen from the entrance.

There were two guards outside who won't let anyone inside until Liam told them to.

I cleared my throat and dragged my bag with me and stood in front of them.

They gave me a curious look but their face was not masked with bitterness.

"I want to meet Mr. Liam," I told them politely.

They looked at each other than said "What's your name, Ma'am"

"Natasha," I told them my name with hesitation.

They repeated the name on a device that was connected to their ear and waited for a few seconds.

"Ma'am your name is not on the list. I am sorry we couldn't let you meet, Mr. Liam," one of the guards told me with a sorry face.

I sighed and looked up to them while tucking a strand behind my ear which had fallen on my face.

"Can you please tell Mr. Liam that I want to meet him?" I pleaded with them.

He sighed and pulled out his phone and called someone. I couldn't hear the person who was on the other side.

"You can go inside Ma'am," he said and opened the door for me.

I gave him a small smile and said "Thank you."

I walked past them and left my bag there on the main door as it was heavy to carry around.

The distance to his house was short for which I am glad. When I reached the main door of the big house, I saw that it was already open.

I let out a deep breath and stepped inside while hugging myself to calm my nerves.

As soon as I ambled inside, I was greeted by the warmness of the house.

As I had imagined the furniture of the house was screaming luxury.

It was mostly black just and it resembles the heart of the owner of the house.

I looked around and saw Liam in a corner in front of the minibar. He was drinking slowly that too in the twilight.

Oh, God. He has been drinking. The last thing I wanted to do was face a drunk Liam.

I walked toward him, he must have heard my footsteps because he turned to face me.

He was looking in a very bad condition. He should be happy because he has ruined my life.

Then why was he sad. It must be one of his dramas to gain some sympathy.

His clothes were disheveled and unironed. His eyes were red and glassy indicated that he was slightly drunk.

His hair was messed up, falling on his face. There was no doubt that he was looking like shit.

"Natasha," I heard him calling my name.

The surprise in his voice indicated that he didn't know that I was here.

"Why did you do that with me?" I asked him the question which has been eating me alive.

"I..." He opened his mouth to say something but he stopped when he couldn't answer that question.

"You have been deceiving me from the beginning. You made me fall in love with you. You knew that I have no one still, you did that knowingly that I would fall easily for you."

"You took my virginity which I had been saving for my husband or someone who loves me. "

"Then you left me after fucking me in the middle of a forest. What if some animal had attacked me?"

He was just looking at me without saying anything. But the thing I noticed was that there was no spark in his eyes.

The last time I saw was the same too. He should be dancing in happiness that he had successfully broken me.

"You even called our child a bastard in front of your entire staff. Do you have any idea what I was feeling at that time?"

"You got me raped" a whimper left my mouth when I said this.

"Natasha I.." I showed him my palm and said "Stop"

"You got me raped when you knew my fear. I had nightmares about that night. I am still getting it."

"You didn't even care about our daughter. What if something had happened to her?"

"Daughter" he whispered in surprise

"Yes, my daughter. Because for you she is a bastard right."

He shook his head but I quickly spoke "You knew you were my first. Then how could you accuse me of that?"

"I am not a slut Mr. Liam. I loved you, that's why I slept with you. I don't even know why I loved you."

I shook my head and "why did you send that corrupt officer at my home who was asking me to fuck him so that I won't have to pay any penalty for defaming."

He looked surprised at that but again I spoke before he could. I would let him talk only after letting out frustration.

"Why did you tell Mr. Cameron to kick me out of the restaurant? Why did you force the entire city not to give me any job?"

"Why did you buy the apartment where I was staying? Why? You knew that I had no money and that place was the only thing I had?"

"Nat What are you- I have never -" "stop don't call me that," I shouted

It was the first time I have ever shouted at him. He was looking stunned and he should be.

"Do you want me to sleep in the streets? I have done that before so I had no problem."

I placed my hand on my belly and asked "What about my daughter?"

" I can't stay in the streets with a newborn baby. I can't even protect myself then how could I even protect a newborn child."

I wiped the tears which had fallen while letting my frustration out. I have had enough now I won't cry anymore.

"I don't love you anymore. Loving you is one of the worst mistakes I have made."

"I... Linda is pregnant with your child. Have you ever asked her if the baby is yours?"

When I saw a flick of sadness on his face, I continued "No right. Why? Just because she is rich. You are a fucking hypocrite, Liam."

"But I can't wish bad for that girl who had helped me. She is a sweetheart. And she and her baby are not at fault."

I pointed my finger at him and accused "You made me hate myself for loving you. You ruined mine and my baby's life."

"Don't break that poor girl's heart. She loves you. Be a good husband to her. She doesn't deserve what I am going through."

"You had shown me a glimpse of heaven before pushing me into a never ending hell."

"Goodbye, Liam. I am leaving this city for good. I won't come back again. I am begging you, please don't bother us again."

"Stay happy with your new family. Not because you deserve it. Just because they haven't wronged anyone."

"Goodbye," With that, I left his house.

I walked toward the entrance where my bag was. Surprisingly I am feeling very light.

Now I am going to close this chapter soon. Now I won't come back here again.

You were my past Liam. I hope I will never see you again.

.

.

.

I got a call from Mother Angela who was like a mother for all the children of the orphanage.

I talked to her for some minutes then I told her that I am leaving. She told me that she has to talk to me, so she would meet me here.

I was currently sitting in the park which was near Liam's house.

I checked the envelope, it contains 200 dollars in cash for which I am glad.

I don't think I have to worry about food and a bus ticket for tonight.

After 10 minutes, Mother Angela came with a sad smile on her. She is really a sweet woman.

She hugged me and said, "I didn't know you were pregnant, Natasha."

I just shrugged and said, "It just happens."

"I am not here to judge you, dear. You know that. I want to tell you something. Your brother came."

I gasped when I heard the word from her mouth. Brother. I have a brother and I didn't know that.

She must have noticed the panicked look on my face because she continued.

"I didn't know that he was your brother. He is rich and he had said that he had been searching for you and finally, he found out about you. He is your stepbrother, Natasha."

She pulled a letter out of her pocket and said "The letter was delivered to me by that person."

"Did he tell you his name?" I asked her in a whisper.

"He just told me that his name is Adam. He loves you. Go to them, my child, they love you." She said

Then she left from there, leaving me alone in a thousand unanswered questions.

I took a deep breath and opened the letter and started to read it.

LETTER'S STARTING

My love, Natasha

I am so sorry baby that it took me so many years to find you. I couldn't even begin to imagine what kind of life you are living.

I belonged to a very rich family. I made a mistake, I fell in love with someone who doesn't deserve my love.

But I didn't regret having you. You were the best thing that ever happened to me.

But my parents don't want me to have you. For them, I did sin. I have you without the bond of the marriage.

They snatched you from me. They took you away from me when I delivered you.

I begged, cried and pleaded to them but they didn't tell me about you. They said that you are dead.

I was shattered when I heard that you died. I wanted to die too but they saved me.

They got me married to a person who already had a child. I had thought he would be bad and abusive.

But I was wrong. Jon was an angel. His son, Adam who was 6 years that time, had accepted me as his mother.

But I have never forgotten you. Not even for a single second. One day Adam saw me with your picture and asked me about it.

I told him about you, baby. After that day, he didn't stop searching for you.

My husband also knew about you. Come back to me, baby. I am ready to beg for your forgiveness.

But please don't hate me, Natasha. I was forced to do that. I love you so much.

Your brother and your new father love you so much. We love you. Please come back, baby.

Your mother

Andrea Thomas.

LETTER'S ENDING

I clutched the letter to my chest and cried while crumbling it. Why did it happen to me now?

I can't go back to them only to ruin their happy family. Wait? Thomas. Adam Thomas.

The person who ruined Kelly's life is my brother. I hope he was not the one.

I won't go there. It's my final decision. I have decided that I'll go to Kelly's.

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So yeah Adam is her brother.

The next chapter is going to be extra emotional. Don't read it without tissues, I am warning you.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Chapter 32

Natasha POV

I booked a cab and reached the bus station. It was silent. I was glad that I was wearing a hooded Jacket.

I covered my head and inspected the streets which were covered with snow.

I will never come back to this city that has ruined me. No matter what happens.

I have been only hurt and nothing more. I went toward the ticket counter where only one person was sitting.

I bought a bus ticket and waited for it to arrive. It was around 8 pm and the snow was falling furiously.

He told me that the bus would be delayed as there is an alert of a snowstorm.

I shuddered in the cold and told him that I'll be around.

I wandered further in the hope to find a safe place where I could keep myself warm.

The streets were deserted. No one was there. I haven't seen anyone in the bus station too.

I felt alone and scared as I couldn't find a single soul here.

They might be in their home enjoying the warmness of the house. And here I am standing alone in a snowstorm.

I took my phone out to call Kelly so that I won't feel alone. Fortunately, She picked it up within seconds.

"You okay, Naty" was the first thing she asked me.

"I am fine. I was alone so I thought to talk to you." I told her

I could hear her sighing in relief then she said "You just scared me."

I saw a garden which was only 10 minutes away from the station. I decided to wait there.

"Kelly, I have a family." I blurted out

"What?" I heard her stunning voice.

"Mother Angela came and told me that a man was looking for me. He had told her that I am his sister. And also gave a letter to her."

"I read it and it was from my mother. She doesn't want to leave me, Kelly. Her parents forced her. She got pregnant but just like Liam that person also betrayed her."

I sniffled and continued "She loves me. Her family loves me too. Kelly her name is Andrea Thomas."

She confirmed my worst fear when she gasped and whispered "That's Adam's mother."

"You are Adam's sister." She stated

I just hope she won't hate me cuz the last thing I want to do was bear her anger for me.

But there was no bitterness in her voice. Instead, there was happiness in it.

"Oh Naty, you have a family who loves you. You should go to them, sweety. Trust me, Andrea loves you so much." She told me

"I have heard a lot about that mysterious child from Adam and his mother." She confessed in a soft voice.

"Go to them, Naty. I am so happy for you." She said

"But he betrayed you." I retorted

"I know babe. But my love for you is more than my anger for him." She chuckled sadly

I sighed and thought about her words. Maybe I should go back and give them a chance.

I should watch it with my eyes if they were lying to me about loving me.

I didn't want to accept them as my family just because they have done wrong with Kelly.

But if Kelly is happy for me then maybe I could go to them. I will have a family.

I and my Scarlett won't be alone anymore. I wiped my tears and said, "Kelly I will-"

Before I could complete the sentence, a shriek left my mouth when a car bumped into me, pushing me into the ground.

My body was crying in pain but the anguish in my abdomen was unbearable when I hit the ground.

I felt what seemed like a more painful cramp in my womb. The blood was oozing out of my forehead, tricking down on my face.

I clenched my teeth to control my pain. I heard footsteps coming toward my direction

There were more than 2 people and they seemed to be in a hurry.

Maybe they are coming back to me. Thank God because I think I'm going into labor.

But it's early as I am only 8 months pregnant and I am underweight too.

I snapped out of my frightened thoughts when I heard someone saying "Sir your work is done."

I held my breath when the mind paid attention to the meaning of the words.

It was not an accident. It was a full planned murder. They are going to kill me.

I didn't move any muscles in terror when someone shook me. They will kill me if I even stir.

"Mr knights, she is dead." I heard him talking to someone.

I bit my lips to control the agony which was spreading all over my body including my heart.

Liam told them to kill me. Why? I have told him that I am leaving then this town then why.

I thought that he would leave me alone as I had told him that I would leave.

I always knew that this day would come when I have to accept my death. I was ready but that was before Scarlett.

Scarlett, my baby. I hope nothing happens to her. But I knew that it was impossible.

Because I could feel something seeping out of my vagina. I didn't make any attempt to wipe my tears.

When I heard the noise of the engine, I froze. After 5 minutes of agony when I was sure that they left, I moved and turned on my back.

I put my hand on my stomach and sobbed loudly, anything to lessen the amount of pain I was feeling.

I touched my leggings and my worst fear came true, I was indeed bleeding.

I saw that my phone was near, with all my energy, I moved my hand a little and grabbed it.

I put it on speaker and heard the screaming of Kelly. She was shouting my name over and over.

"Kelly" somehow I let out her name.

"Natasha. What was that voice? Are you okay? Why does that bastard want to kill you?" She sobbed

"Call 911" I gritted my teeth to control the scream when I felt another contraction.

"On it," she said and started to call someone.

I was near the alley so I dragged myself toward it to save myself from those monsters.

What if they come back to kill me? I can't let them kill us. Oh God, please save my baby.

I rested my back on the wall and looked down to see that the color of the snow beneath me had changed.

The white snow has turned red. I couldn't control the howl which came out of my mouth.

I clutched the jacket which I was wearing with my hands while whimpering.

I put the phone on the ground and put my hands on my stomach.

"Scarlett are you okay?" I whimpered softly

"Naty. I am sorry the paramedics will take some time due to the snowstorm." She wept.

After hearing her, I could feel the energy draining out of my body leaving it cold and weak.

"My baby" I cried out.

"I'll call Adam. He will come here, don't worry. Just wait Naty, they will come." She tried to be confident but her voice wavered at last.

I could hear her talking to someone who might be my step-brother.

"Adam, help her. She is in pain. Help your sister Adam or she will die."

I couldn't hear anything after that. My vision got blurry. I could not focus on anything.

I could see the gleam coming from street lights. But they were spinning just like my lifeline.

I gritted my teeth when another contraction came. The last bit of energy which I had left me.

I slumped down on the concrete floor on my side, staring at nothing.

"Naty, just hold on. Adam is on his way. He will be there soon, sweety. Just fight. Fight for your baby." I heard her hoarse voice.

I didn't give her any response. I don't know what to say. I waited just like she said.

The snowfall didn't curtail. My clothes were now wet due to blood and snow.

I didn't know how much time had passed. Maybe 2 or 3 hours. No help has come to help me yet.

I removed my jacket and put it around my stomach, covered it completely so that my Scarlett won't be cold.

Snow has covered the ground up to 5 inches. I had myself hidden in a corner where the snow couldn't cover me.

My lips were trembling and my body was shaking due to the cold. I couldn't feel my hand and my legs.

"I am tired, Kelly. I need to rest. I want to sleep peacefully." I mumbled, breaking the silence

"Don't say that. Please, I am begging you. Don't give up, Naty." I could hear her sobbing.

"Save my baby. If I die, please take care of my Scarlett, Kelly. I don't want her to be alone just like me. I have endured enough and now my suffering will end." I mumbled

"Don't give her to Liam. He doesn't deserve any good thing in this world." I sobbed.

"I hate you, Liam. You will suffer. You have killed us and I would never forgive you for it." I muttered

"No, No" Kelly shouted hysterically

I looked ahead of me where I saw a light coming toward me. It was near. My end was near.

I put my hand on my stomach and felt no movement. My baby is no more.

I won't leave her alone. I will join her too. We will be happy in our little world where no one will harm us.

"We will be alright, Scarlett. Sleep sweety. After this, no one will disturb us. We will live together happily." I whispered and managed to put on a small painful smile.

I don't want my daughter to see my scared and sad face before leaving this life.

I mumbled a lullaby that I thought I would tell my daughter.

Now it's time to say good night,

Good night, sleep tight.

Now the sun turns out his light,

Good night, sleep tight.

Dream sweet dreams for me,

Dream sweet dreams for you.

Close your eyes and I'll close mine,

Good night, sleep tight.

Now the moon begins to shine,

Good night, sleep tight.

Dream sweet dreams for me,

Dream sweet dreams for you.

Close your eyes and I'll close mine,

Good night, sleep tight.

Now the sun turns out his light,

Good night, sleep tight.

Dream sweet dreams for me,

Dream sweet dreams for you.

Good night,

Good night, everybody,

Everybody, everywhere,

Good night.

"Thank you for doing everything for me, Kelly. I love you. I hope I will get a sister like you in my next birth." I told her and the painful groan left my mouth

That was my last words to her because after that my breath got stuck in my throat.

I never thought that I would die like that. I don't want to die. I want to live and stay with my Scarlett.

I wanted to be the one who will watch her face after her birth.

I wanted to watch her first crawl, first step, and first word. I wanted to watch her grow up. I wanted her to share her first crush with me.

But now that choice has been snatched from me. Liam was the one behind it. You will see hell on this earth, Liam.

I saw visions before me. Finding out that someone loves me. Knowing that I was pregnant.

The happiness which I felt when I found out that I am going to have a baby girl who will make me the happiest person alive.

Those were the last things I have seen before closing my eyes forever. The darkness on the way to heaven engulfed me in his arms.

I was now safe. I don't have to worry about anything. I hope I won't get this type of Cruel Destiny at my next birth.

Now, I am free.

!!!

Chapter 33

Third Person POV

(After sex)

Liam woke up on his time. No matter what happened he couldn't sleep after 6 am.

Since his father shifted his post to him, he couldn't rest. He has loads of burden on his shoulder.

He felt something soft on his chest. He opened his eyes and met with a view that took his breath away.

Natasha was sleeping soundly with her head on his chest. Her soft locks were caressing his body.

His arm was encircling her waist. A smile unconsciously curled on his lips.

With his free hand, he stroked her cheeks which were covered with her hair.

'So soft' he thought in his mind when he felt the smooth skin under his fingertips.

He froze when he remembered what he was doing. 'It is wrong Liam' his mind warned him.'

He agreed with his mind and decided to leave before she could wake up.

He knew that she might be waking up soon. He gently placed her head on the pillow and sat up straight.

He looked at her face which was free of any burden. She was looking like a nymph.

Her breast was covered with the blanket but still, he could watch the swell of her breast.

He couldn't control from leaning toward her face and kissing her soft petal lips.

'Delicious' his mind told him and he nodded.

He quickly picked up his clothes and wore them. If he looked at her one more time, he won't be able to control himself from fucking her again.

Last night was one of the best nights for him. No one had satisfied him more than Natasha and HER.

Not even Linda. And that's a big thing because she has been sleeping with him since they turned 17.

She knew what he wanted when it comes to sex. It was him who had suggested to her, to get surgery to increase the size of her tits.

She agreed because he knew that she loves him. He can't love anyone. Loving someone is not his cup of tea.

He knew how to fuck and that's more than enough for him. And Natasha is a good girl

She doesn't deserve someone like him. So it's good to end this here and right now.

After wearing his clothes, he turned toward her for a few seconds and mumbled "You don't deserve this."

He left her alone. He knew that it was an asshole move but he never wanted to see her again.

Because if he did, he would never leave her alone.

.

.

.

(His office)

His head was aching after hearing his parent's continuous talk about him getting married to Linda.

Why can't they understand that he doesn't want to marry anyone? Linda is his friend and she always will be.

He couldn't let his parents ruin his life. Their parents wanted to merge their business in the form of an alliance.

He was in a bad mood and that turned worse when he saw Natasha in the building.

She was looking like a nymph which she was. There wasn't an ounce of makeup on her face but there was a glow on her face.

She was radiant. She was looking like a scared cat in the cage of hungry wolves.

But suddenly that changed when he thought that she would get to know his real identity.

He got scared and the fire of fear scorched inside him. He doesn't want her to know the real him.

He did everything in his power to send her back but that stupid guard came and told her his identity.

She was looking betrayed but that doesn't stop her from telling him the truth which shook him to the core.

She was pregnant with his child. The child which they both had created that night.

He'd never had sex with anyone without protection except Linda and HER.

Linda was on birth control so there was no need for him to use protection.

However, Natasha was a different case. The thought that she could get pregnant had crossed his mind.

That time it gave him an immense amount of satisfaction to claim her for the rest of his life.

But now it has changed. He can't accept her child. If he accepted her child then he would betray HER.

She was his life and after her, he had promised that he would never give her place to anyone.

She wasn't his Miranda. But was Miranda ever his?

He did what he thought was best. He humiliated her and denied to accept that the child was his.

He lied to her that she didn't satisfy him. She did more than that. She had created havoc inside him.

He couldn't sleep with any other girl after her. He had tried but he couldn't get hard.

He warned her to stay away from him and never told anyone that the child was his.

Her tears were doing something to him so he just turned away but he had heard all the things his staff was saying.

They were questioning her character. They were calling her name. He remembered all of them.

He went to his cabin and called 10 employees of his who were bad-mouthing her and fired them.

He gave them a warning not to speak anything related to this or they would be on the streets.

No one can harm her other than him.

.

.

.

(Restaurant)

He couldn't believe that his father had done this. How could he do that without asking his consent?

He looked at the shy and excited face of Linda who was sitting with their parents.

He was pissed but he didn't show that to anyone. He needed some kind of release from this.

It also didn't help that he hadn't had sex with anyone since Natasha.

"Aren't you happy, Liam?" Linda's father asked him

He just forced a smile on his face and said "Yeah very."

After that, he didn't pay any attention to his surroundings.

His mind went toward Natasha who might be 6 months pregnant right now.

Just like she was supposed to be. It was all HIS fault if HE wasn't in Miranda's life then they both would have been happy.

Miranda was beautiful but not more than Natasha. She is a nymph, a very sexy one.

He felt a twinge of guilt when he thought about Natasha. He had done wrong with her.

She doesn't deserve that and he felt an immense amount of anger when he thought about that phone call he made when he was drunk.

He shouldn't have used those words with her. Not with her. But he was frustrated and when he thought to ask about her, she didn't pick up the call.

He snapped out of his thoughts when he felt a hand on his shoulder.

He looked at the warm eyes of his fiancee who was looking at him with concern.

He looked around and saw that their parents had left them alone in his house.

She hugged him and buried her face in the crook of his neck and whispered "I love you."

He pressed his lips together and after a few seconds whispered "I know"

She sighed and pulled back but gave him her best smile and said "We are going to get married."

"Yeah." He muttered

"Liam let's go. I am hungry. I want you to take me to that restaurant." Linda spoke excitedly and dragged Liam out of his house.

He just sighed and followed her. The ride was a blur for him. Linda was chattering nonstop.

He didn't try to stop her even once. Let her be happy with it. At least someone is happy.

What shocked him was that the restaurant they were in was where Natasha worked.

He couldn't stop her from entering and sitting on a table. He just sat beside her and hoped Natasha won't come to take their order.

But it was just a hope. He never wanted Natasha and Linda to meet each other.

He knew that if Linda got to know that he was the father of her baby, then she would tell this to his mother and sister.

He loved his mother and sister very much. If they got to know about this then they would leave him alone.

He warned Natasha with his eyes and bad-mouthed her in front of Linda.

He called her slut when he knew that he was the one who took her virginity.

'He will talk to her later' He decided and took Linda back to his house as she wanted to stay with him.

He came back when he knew she would be free. He would talk to her and then would pay her money so that she could live her life easily.

But he was shocked when he saw someone's hands on her waist. It looked like they were more than friends.

Unknowingly, he felt something in his heart which he hadn't felt since Miranda.

Natasha gasped after watching him and the person also turned to face them.

This face. He had seen him somewhere. But the memory was long forgotten.

Natasha denied that she knew him. How could she do that? Just because of that dude.

That guy means something to her. That's why she didn't tell him that she knew Liam.

'He will show her that she belongs to him.' He thought and watched them leave.

He straight went to a bar and got intoxicated. How could she forget him?

He went to her house and asked her the same question. How could she forget about their child?

He then kissed her and he got hard after so many months which was a relief for him.

But again that bastard came and ruined it for her. They both were fucking that's why he came into her this late.

He thought that she was innocent. Well, she was. But no, the baby couldn't be his.

That guy might be the father of the child. He threw the flask on the table, shattering it.

He sat on his knees and screamed hard. She cheated on him. She told him that the baby was his.

Linda came into his room and gasped when she saw him in that state. He was looking messed up.

His hand was bleeding along with insides but she didn't know about that.

"Liam, you are hurt" she whispered and came back with a first aid box.

She cleaned his wound and put a band-aid in it. She was about to leave but Liam clutched her hand.

He cupped her face in his hand and asked "You loved me right?"

There was a desperation in his voice which was a shock for both of them. Liam Knights was anything but desperate.

"Yes"

That was the only answer he needed before he took her to his bed, having his way with her.

Again asking if she loves him. But not even once he told her that he loves her too.

Her heart broke when she heard him saying 'Nat' before climaxing then he passed out, leaving her cold and in tears.

Few days passed, he tried his best to remember what he did that night because Linda wasn't behaving like before.

He went to his room and started to search for the file he wanted. But all files scattered on the floor making him curse.

He started to pick up the file but a file or to be more precise a picture caught his attention.

It ignited the fire which has never been diminished. He was the same person who had ruined his life.

He read the name of the person loudly and dangerously

Scott Allen husband of Miranda Allen.

!!!

So what do you think about Liam's POV?

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS.

Till then



Chapter 34

I WILL WRITE AN ALTERNATIVE ENDING TOO WHERE NATASHA WILL BE ALIVE AND WILL GET HER HAPPY ENDING.

Third Person POV

The rage inside him was boiling, making him want to kill someone. More precisely Scott Allen.

He had snatched his love from him and now he had seized his child again too.

No that child in Natasha's womb could not be his. She might have slept with that bastard after him.

They were playing with him just like she did. Miranda had promised him that she only loves him.

Scott must have paid Natasha to lure him and make him fall in love with her.

What could he expect from a slut like her? She might have done that too with many men.

Scott was taking revenge from him for what he had done with him. He might have got to know about him and Miranda.

He clenched his fist and threw the file in the fireplace and watched it turned into ashes.

'You have made a mistake, Natasha. I thought that you were innocent. But you are a bitch. His bitch' he mumbled in his mind.

He got a call from Officer Seth. He cut the call in anger. He heard the sound of the message.

He opened it in anger and read it. This ignited his fire of anger more than before.

So now this bitch wanted to sue him. Her lover might have told her to do that.

"You are gone, Natasha." He shouted

.

.

.

He snorted the lines of cocaine and groaned in ecstasy. His eyes rolled back and he fell on the luxurious couch of the club.

He felt instant relief and for some seconds, he forgot everyone. But after a missed call from his man brought him back.

He picked up the call and heard "Your work is done."

He smirked and pushed the random girl, who had been sitting on his lap, on the couch.

He walked out of the club which was only 5 minutes away from the place where he had to be.

The rain was falling furiously along with irregular thunders. He doesn't care about it.

He sat in his car and reached the place he needed to be. He saw the broken look on her face which gave him some satisfaction.

She called him with her trembling lips. Her eyes were red from crying furiously.

She was still a nymph in his eyes but now she was also a slut who had her legs spread in front of him for revenge.

He felt something in his guts when he saw the blood on the ground along with his man cum.

He shouldn't feel guilty about it. She was asking for it. She was just showing him that she was innocent.

He scoffed internally and went toward her. He offered her more sex but she shouted at him.

His fury got out of his hand when she mentioned her sister. He did what he had promised himself not to do.

He raised his hand on a woman. The flame erupted inside his hand after that, literally burning him alive.

But that didn't subsidize his anger. He warned her to stay away from that bastard and threatened to kill that bastard's child.

He would never kill Natasha no matter what. He likes her but her child is another case.

She looked at him with those sad and painful eyes making him feel guilty. So stood up and went toward his car, leaving her alone.

The drugs were fucking with his head making him remorseful. He shouldn't have taken that drug.

He crashed on his bed and slept, not knowing that he had ruined an innocent life in a misunderstanding.

.

.

.

Few days have passed, now the guilt was eating him alive. He shouldn't have let out all his frustration on that girl.

He couldn't think anything straight when it came to Miranda. He pulled his hair and again gulped down a shot of whiskey.

That's what he has been doing after that night when he did sin.

His body needed some alcohol to sleep or he might stay awake all night, tossing and turning in bed.

He didn't touch Linda after that night and she also kept her distance from him.

He sighed because he didn't know the reason behind her anger.

He got a call from Officer Seth and he picked it up with a sigh and asked "What do you want now?"

"Sir are you sure you don't want to sue her. I can make it look like she had been calling you to her home."

He got furious when he heard him talking shit and shouted "I have told you a thousand times to leave her the fuck alone. Is it difficult for you to understand?"

Without hearing his reply, he cut the call and rubbed his temple which was aching.

He received another call and was about to cut it off, thinking that it might be that stupid Seth.

But stopped himself and saw that it was from the person he had ordered to follow Scott.

"Sir Miss Natasha and Mr. Allen never met each other after that night. Mr. Allen was Miss Natasha's doctor during her pregnancy. She met him when she was 4 months pregnant. She isn't his girlfriend sir."

Liam dropped the phone after that. He had dragged her into his mess thinking that she might be a part of it.

But no she was never. Oh, God. What had he done? His jealousy ruined everything.

He needed peace or else he would go mad. Unknowingly a tear fell from his eyes.

He picked up his keys and went toward his mother's house. She will help me relax.

He ran inside his house and saw his mother in the living room talking to his sister who was crying.

He stopped suddenly when they looked at him. He stepped toward them slowly and cupped her sister's cheeks.

"What happened, Brianna?"

His sister and his mother were his life. He loves his dad but sometimes he doesn't agree with the way he behaves.

He had seen his father hitting his mother one time and that day his father had lost respect in his eyes.

After that day, he didn't talk to his father much other than the family dinner they have once a month.

"He betrayed me." She whimpered

She had just turned 20 this year. He had given her everything she desired, to compensate for the time where he was not with her.

"Who sweetheart?" He asked her while wiping her tears.

"My boyfriend. He recorded our video and now he is blackmailing me, Liam." She told him, ashamed of her deed.

It was then Liam remembered a saying his grandmother used to say.

"You will never understand the damage you did to someone until the same thing is done to you.'

He felt an immense amount of fury when he thought about his sister getting betrayed.

In reality, he had done the same with someone's sister. The difference is that she doesn't have any brothers.

"I will take care of it, Brie. Don't worry." He mumbled and went to his room.

He stripped off his clothes and stepped inside the shower. The cold water of the shower didn't calm his rage.

And for the first time after Miranda, he cried. He cried about what had happened to his sister.

He cried for what he had done with Natasha. But now nothing can be changed.

But he can help her with money as an apology. Yes, he can do that.

He will even provide her an apartment where she could stay during and after her pregnancy.

He was lying down on his bed, staring at the ceiling when someone knocked on his door.

His mother came inside with a smile on her beautiful face. Even though she has aged, she was still as beautiful as ever.

She sat on the bed and patted her thigh. He took the hint and laid his head down on her lap.

"Why are you worried, Liam?" She asked him softly while caressing his hair.

"I did sin. I hurt someone, mom. I ruined and betrayed that person." He confessed.

He needed peace and that could only be provided by him confessing.

"You should apologize to that person, Liam. I never thought my son would do something like that." She sighed

He grabbed her hand and looked at her with a sad face and whispered "I am sorry."

She gave him a small smile and said "You should say this to that person."

.

.

.

Time passed but Liam didn't meet Natasha after that. The guilt was eating him alive.

He knew that he was being a coward but he just couldn't face her. But he kept his promise.

He had told his man to transfer the money in her account every month along with that he had bought her an apartment.

He heard a crying voice from his bathroom. He furrowed his eyebrow in confusion then it dawned on him that Linda is in the bathroom.

He ran toward it and found her in the bathroom, sitting with her back against the wall.

He knelt on her level and asked "What happened?"

She looked at him with teary eyes but a smile was present there. She showed him something and he looked at it.

He fell on his butt in surprise when he saw that it was a pregnancy test which was showing a plus sign.

She was pregnant and the baby was his. He had knocked up another girl.

It wasn't supposed to happen. She wasn't supposed to get pregnant.

He had a lot on his plate and this baby will be too much for him. She was not Miranda then how could he accept that child.

"I need space." He mumbled out and walked out of the bathroom at a fast speed.

She looked at his retreated form with a sad look as tears kept falling from her eyes.

She knew that they haven't talked about babies yet. But she wasn't expecting this reaction from him.

Her hand went back to her stomach. She has a baby inside her. She was ready to sacrifice her modeling career for it.

'Natasha was so lucky for me. I just touched her bump and I got pregnant.' She giggled

Knowing that it takes more than touching someone's bump to get pregnant.

He didn't come back that day. He was driving in the hope to find a mysterious place where he would be free of tension.

It was Karma. He had betrayed Natasha and snatched her happiness.

And now he was restless. He couldn't find peace anywhere. He sighed and banged his hand on the steering wheel.

.

.

.

Linda had told her parents about being pregnant and they, in turn, told this to Liam's parents.

There was happiness around everywhere but the would-be parents weren't happy.

Linda was sad that Liam wasn't supporting but she accepted it and stopped asking him questions regarding their baby.

Liam hasn't been sleeping for a few days which was pushing him into the pit of depression.

When his mother insisted he take Linda for the check-up, he agreed because he didn't know how to say no to his mother.

The doctor said the baby was healthy and good. Liam excused himself when Linda insisted on the ultrasound.

He couldn't breathe inside properly. It was like he was cheating on Natasha. He wasn't with her when she was pregnant.

Then why would he stay with Linda as well? He needed a vacation and that too away from her.

He called Adam and told him to come to the hospital. After 10 minutes, he went outside and saw Adam was on the phone.

He was looking disappointed and cut the call when Liam stepped toward him.

"Have you found her?" Liam asked him, knowing about his mysterious sister.

Adam sighed and said "No I haven't yet. But don't worry I will find my sister. I have found a clue and if I am right, then it won't take time."

There was a small smile on his face when he thought about his sister. She might be his step-sister but he will take care of her like a real one.

Liam sighed and turned his face only to see Natasha carrying a bag that seemed to be quite heavy.

He was surprised when he saw her frightened look when she saw him along with Adam.

He wanted to move toward her and when he saw her big bump, he couldn't help himself.

His hand moved toward her bump unconsciously making her tremble. He could have touched it if Adam wouldn't have spoken.

He put his hand back and looked at Adam who was staring at her curiously.

'He better not be thinking about her.' He thought in his mind angrily.

Their trance got broken by Linda who was coming toward them and happily greeted Natasha.

She even lied that he was taking care of her when he never said anything relating to the baby.

He saw the heartbroken look on Natasha's face and she gave him an accusing and sad glance.

He wanted to clear the misunderstanding but he kept his mouth shut. His ego wasn't allowing him to say something.

She went away from them but he saw the tears falling from her eyes. He bis his lips and sighed.

.

.

.

His life was anything but happy. Someone had cursed his happiness.

(I know who did it. My readers 😉)

He had been drinking in the morning too. Sleep was far away from his eyes and whenever he closed his eyes, he saw the sad eyes of Natasha.

He started to behave well with Linda but when it came to the baby, he kept himself distant.

He didn't know how to involve himself in his children's lives. He put his head down on the bar table and groaned.

He heard footsteps behind him and he looked back and saw Natasha. She was still a Nymph but now there was no glow on her face.

She was looking skinny which made her bump more prominent. She has dark circles under her eyes.

She started her accusation and he just stared at her with a guilty face.

He had wronged her and he deserved all the curses he was getting from her.

But he had to interfere when she started to accuse him of wrong things.

He had never talked to Seth after that call. Then why would he tell him to sue her?

And snatching her job and house. He had made sure to put 20 grand in her bank account every month.

And he even bought her an apartment. Then how? She did stop him before he could explain.

And knowing that he was going to be the father of a daughter was thrilling.

She was leaving and now she won't come back. He wanted to say something, anything to stop her from leaving.

But then he thought that he didn't deserve them. They deserve happiness in his life which he couldn't provide.

She walked out of the house, breaking something inside him. He stared at her until she left the house.

"You shouldn't have done that Liam."

He heard her voice and turned back to see a crying Linda.

!!!

Till then



Chapter 35

Third Person POV

Linda slowly descended the stairs with her 3 months pregnant bump.

Her eyes were filled with tears of betrayal and anger with a mix of sadness.

She couldn't believe what she had heard. Her Liam couldn't do something like that.

But he wasn't her Liam anymore. She never thought that she would get a shock like this when she told the guard to allow Natasha inside the house.

Liam had wronged Natasha. That poor soul doesn't deserve something like this.

She stood in front of him and asked "Was Natasha telling the truth?"

She knew the answer as she had heard everything but still she wanted to listen to this from his mouth.

"Yes," he whispered with a broken sigh.

The force of the slap was enough for him to stumble. He gaped at her but didn't say anything.

He deserved that slap and many more things that she has to deliver.

She grabbed the collar of his shirt and asked "How could you do that to someone so innocent? How could you ruin her life along with her child? You just didn't spoil her life. You have done the same with me and our child."

She was sobbing after telling him her thoughts. He had no answer for that other than 'I am sorry'

"You should apologize to her, Liam. You have spoiled her whole life. Do you know who she was?" She asked him

She didn't wait for the answer and said "She was the same girl whom we had rescued that night from those men."

His eyes widened when he heard her. How could she be that girl whom he had saved?

He had saved her that night from getting raped but he was the one who got her raped this time.

Tears started to fall from his eyes and he fell on his knees. He was depressed and had no peace in his life.

"You screamed her name when you came that night. I didn't know that it was her." She confessed to him with a broken voice

Then she continued "I have done everyone you wanted. I have been just waiting for you to love me back. Is that too much to ask?"

"Do you love me?" She asked him suddenly

He looked at her with guilt in his eyes. He was going to break her heart and he doesn't want to do that.

"I don't love you." He whispered with tears falling from his eyes.

She just nodded with a sob and said "I knew that."

"What about Natasha?" She questioned him softly

"I feel something for her but I only loved Miranda." He replied to her

Fury flashed into her eyes and she shouted "Don't take the name of that bitch in front of me. She had used you, Liam."

She knew the real Miranda better than anyone else. She was nothing but a cheating bitch.

She had tried to tell him about her but he was so lost in his love that he forgot what is right and what is wrong.

"I love Natasha." He mumbled slowly as if scared to voice out his words.

"You love Natasha." She asserted

"I love Natasha. Oh god, I love her. What have I done? Linda, she left me. What will I do now?" He sobbed, covering his face with his hands

Her heart was breaking, watching him crying for someone who was not her.

She knelt on her knees and grabbed his face softly and said "Don't let her leave then. Stop her before she could leave."

.

.

.

Kelly was crying loudly on the phone but she didn't get any response from the other side.

With trembling heart, she booked her flight but due to snowstorm tickets were not available.

She cursed loudly and with her another phone, she called Scott.

.

.

.

Scott was on the way to the hospital for the emergency. It was quite difficult to reach there as the snow was falling heavily.

He turned his attention to the seat where his phone was kept. He was as usual waiting for her to call like he has been doing for 1 month.

He remembered her words that she won't call him but still he had a hope inside him that someday she will call him.

His phone rang and his eyes lit up thinking that it might be Natasha but he frowned when he saw that it was from an unknown number.

He picked it up thinking that it might be some patient and replied "Hello. This is Dr. Scott Allen."

He heard a sobbing sound from the other end and the person replied "Scott it's me, Kelly. Please save her. She is dying."

His heart stopped for a few seconds. It was the same words he had heard when his wife was dying.

"Who? Please tell me what happened?" He somehow let out

"She got into an accident and she isn't replying to anything. She was near the bus station. Due to a snowstorm, the paramedics could not reach there. Please help her. I will be there too. It will take some time. Please." She pleaded to him

"Kelly, don't cry. I'm reaching there." He said and cut the call.

He turned his car toward the bus station with a determination to reach there and save her before anything happened to her.

.

.

.

OBJ

[I have changed the cast of Adam cuz I'll use that character in my next story]

Adam reached the destination after some time. He ran out of his car and shouted her name.

But he got no response. He groaned loudly and started to wander around the streets to find her.

It was a difficult task as the snow was falling heavily. He was frustrated and scared.

He doesn't want to lose his sister before even meeting her. She was all he thought after he got to know from their mother.

He was passing by that alley when he saw a figure lying on the ground. She was pregnant.

He ran toward her and heard Kelly crying. He could hear that she was trying to talk to her but was getting no response.

He sat on his knees and removed her hair from her face. His breath hitched when he saw that she was the girl whom he had met last month.

She was so close to him yet he couldn't save her. With trembling hands, he shook her and let out her name "Natasha."

"Adam are you there?" Kelly asked him immediately.

"It's me, Kelly" he voiced out

It was a strange thing to talk to her after a lot of time. She sounded the same as she always did.

"Please save her, Adam. She is not waking up. Take her to the hospital. I'll call her doctor." She replied to him

She doesn't care that she was taking help from the person she hates. Her love for Natasha is more than anyone else.

"Ok," he said and cut the call and put it in his pocket.

He checked her pulse which was not there. It couldn't happen. He picked her up and saw that her clothes were drenched in blood and snow.

With tears falling down his eyes, he took her toward his car and laid her down in the back seat.

He covered her with the blanket he brought from his home. He looked at her dead body with teary eyes and said "Please don't die."

He started the engine and drove to the hospital. He got a phone call and he picked it up and said "Hello"

"This is Dr. Scott. I am Natasha's doctor. Her friend informed me that you are taking her to the hospital." He heard from the other end.

"I'll take her there quickly." He whispered

He looked at her from the rear mirror and saw that she hadn't moved an inch since that time.

He wiped his tears with his free hand and just hoped he wasn't too late.

He got another phone and he picked it up without looking at the name and heard "Hello Adam. It's urgent."

It was from Liam who was driving out in the snowstorm to reach and stop Natasha from leaving.

"It can't be as urgent as my sister, Liam. I have found her. She was the same girl we had seen last month. Liam, she is dying." He cried on the phone.

Without knowing that, he was telling the same person who had ruined his sister's life.

"Natasha " Liam whispered lowly

"I am taking her to the nearby hospital. I'll call you later." He mumbled and cut the call.

He had never imagined meeting his sister in this condition. She wasn't breathing but he had hoped that she would be alright.

A hope which couldn't do anything.

.

.

.

Everything was set up in the hospital for Natasha. They were just waiting for her to arrive.

Due to the unavailability of the plane, Kelly was driving the whole way through Chicago to Davenport.

She was shaking and her eyes were blurred with the tears which she was continuously shedding.

She doesn't want to lose Natasha. She was the only one in her life who loves her unconditionally.

She blamed herself because she didn't fight her to come with her when she left that city.

Had she known that this would happen, then she would have dragged Natasha with her.

She didn't know how this day turned worse. She had prepared everything to make Natasha comfortable in her house.

She had even bought baby furniture and toys so that Scarlett would be alright.

She could just hope that Natasha and Scarlett were alright.

.

.

.

Adam reached the hospital, it took him at least one hour. He scooped Natasha in his arms and rushed inside her.

They took her to the ICU where a lot of doctors were present excluding Scott.

They checked her heartbeat but found none. Her lips had turned blue due to hypothermia.

It was obvious to everyone that she was dead and many hours had passed.

They called Scott inside for the Cesarean. She might be dead but maybe her baby was alive.

When Scott came inside, he stumbled when he saw Natasha who was that time nothing but a dead body.

Somehow controlling his tears, he moved toward the table for the Cesarean.

His hands were trembling but still, he did the surgery to save the precious thing which Natasha had left behind.

Last time no doctor could save his wife and child but he just hoped that he could save Scarlett.

.

.

.

Adam was pacing the corridor in anxiety. He was shaking with fear of something unknown.

He had received a call from his mother. He didn't have any option other than telling her the truth.

She broke down in tears and told him that she was coming there. He wanted to deny her due to the snowfall but decided against it.

He sat on the seat and closed his eyes and remembered the time when he got to know that he had a sister.

FLASHBACK (Almost 3 years ago)

He had just started dating a new girl Kelly. He was about to knock on his mother's room but stopped when he heard her crying.

The door was opened so he peeked inside and saw that his mom had some paper in her hand and she was caressing it.

He slowly walked inside and saw that it was a picture. An ultrasound picture.

"Who is this mom?" He asked her curiously

She flinched hearing his voice and turned her teary eyes toward him.

She decided to tell him the truth about her life. She told him about Natasha.

FLASHBACK ENDS

From that day he didn't stop his search for her. He had gone through the whole state.

He sighed and opened his eyes and heard Liam's voice "Adam how is she?"

Adam furrowed his eyebrow in confusion when he saw a desperate Liam in front of him.

His eyes were bloodshot and he seemed to be in pain. He stood up and stopped him from moving further.

"What happened? Why are you running?"

"Adam, how is Natasha? Why aren't you saying something?" He questioned his best friend

Adam sighed and said "She had stopped breathing when I found her. They have taken her to the ICU."

"I am scared. I have just found her and I don't want to lose her. She is my baby sister." He broke down in front of him.

Liam was shaken up when he got to know that she was found in that condition and that she was Adam's lost sister.

Adam will kill him when he gets to know that he was the reason behind her misery and her death.

His tears fell making Adam confused. He didn't know why his friend was behaving like this.

"Liam, why are you behaving like this?" He asked him in confusion

Before he could further question him, the door opened and Scott came outside with a dead look in his eyes.

He had a small child in his hand which was not moving. They had cleaned her up and she was wrapped in a pink blanket.

When his gaze fell on Liam, his dead look changed into a rage. Everyone could see the fire in his eyes.

"How is my sister?" Adam asked him to break the trance between him and Liam.

Scott looked into his eyes and uttered "Your sister is dead"

He then turned his gaze toward the little child in his arms and continued "and her child too"

"No, you are lying. She is not dead. She can't die. No." He fell on the chair and sobbed

His sister can't die. He had just met her. How could she leave him before meeting him?

It was his fault. He was late. He couldn't save her. He was never there for her.

It was his punishment. He had cheated on Kelly and Karma gave him his punishment.

But what was Natasha's fault? She was innocent in this and her baby too.

Liam on the other hand froze. Natasha was dead. His child died too. They both are dead and it was his fault.

His hands moved without him noticing and took Scarlett from Scott gently and looked at her.

She was the most beautiful girl he had seen after her mother. Her eyes were closed and her lips were a color of light blue.

She was pale and cold. She had a tiny nose and small lips. Her cheeks were wrinkly and white.

She was looking so tiny in his hands. But her chest was not moving indicating that she was no more.

He slid down on the wall with her still in his arms. His daughter was dead.

Then comes the tears which never stopped. He cried hard and loud, attracting some attention toward him.

He held her in his arms and sobbed hard "Please come back. I am sorry please don't leave me too."

He leaned toward her and placed his lips on her cold forehead. He hugged her gently to his chest to keep her warm.

"I am so sorry, Scarlett. Please come back. Forgive your father, baby. Please." He whimpered

Adam stilled when he heard his best friend's confession. He was Natasha's child's father.

They couldn't be lovers as he was about to marry Linda. And he never mentioned it to him as well.

Maybe Liam's father was forcing him to marry Linda without his wish. That's why that day, Natasha was looking sad.

He felt bad for Liam too. He had lost his lover and his child too. He cried too for the loss of his sister whom he had never met.

!!!

Chapter 36

Third Person POV

It was overcast weather but there was no rain. The black clouds had engulfed almost all the sky in his clutch.

It was the day after the death of two angels. The snow had stopped falling after midnight and clouds took over that.

They were now standing in a church for their funeral. Everyone was dressed in black just like the color of the clouds.

The caskets had been brought and now they just had to be lower down in the ground.

Andrea Thomas was sitting on a bench and staring ahead. She wasn't giving attention to the priest who had started the funeral speech.

She had lost the child whom she never met after delivering her. The child she yearned to meet when she got to know she was alive.

She turned her gaze toward her daughter who was lying in a casket along with her granddaughter.

She was looking so beautiful. She was not looking dead. It seemed like she was sleeping peacefully.

She never hated anyone like her parents who were the reason behind her daughter's misery.

Had she known that this would happen with her daughter, she would have aborted her.

Her child had been starving for a few days and here she was eating her meal.

How could she sleep in nights when her daughter had been working all day?

She was the worst mother in this entire world. No mother should watch her child's death before her.

Had she started her search for her ignoring her parent's lies, her daughter would have been alive.

But now it was too late. She could just hope that her daughter and granddaughter will be at peace in heaven.

Her husband squeezed her shoulders gently. He couldn't do anything other than comforting her.

He had heard a lot about Natasha in their 19 years of marriage. He had tried to find her too but his wife's parents had her well hidden.

Tears fell from Andrea's eyes and she closed them and whispered "Rest in peace, my angels."

.

.

.

A person was sitting inside the church with red eyes whose tears had not stopped.

His gaze was on the angels who were lying inside the coffin. He was none other than Liam.

He was wearing a black suit with no tie. His hair was messy. His eyes were reflecting on what he was feeling inside. Dead.

He just wanted to go back in time and begged for Natasha's forgiveness.

If he had done that, they wouldn't be dead. He just had to man up and accepted his responsibility.

He was silent throughout the whole ordeal. He didn't say anything when Adam asked him to confess what he wanted.

He had nothing to say to anyone. He had done anything but good with her.

.

.

.

The casket had been brought to the cemetery to get them buried.

Scott was mourning the loss of his second love. He had watched his pregnant wife getting buried.

That time he was devastated but this time he was dead from inside.

It didn't matter to him that she had refused his love. His love for her didn't falter.

In that case, he had hoped that she would come back to him anytime she wanted.

He would have waited forever for her. But now she was dead and will never come back to him.

He had not been lying when he said that he was ready to accept Scarlett.

When he first started to love her, he knew that she was pregnant with someone's child.

From that day, he had started dreaming about their little family where he would give her the love she deserves.

Along with her, he would love little Scarlet and would try to become the best dad for her.

But now it was just a dream for him. A dream which will never come true.

He wiped the tears which had fallen from his eyes and whispered "Rest in peace, my loves."

.

.

.

Now it was time to bury them inside the grave. Scott came forward toward the coffin, making everyone confused.

Natasha's family didn't know about their friendship or that Scott has feelings for her.

Scott knelt and grabbed Natasha's cold hand. Her hand was soft and beautiful just like her.

A couple of tears fell from his eyes when the hand, which he has been clasping, never moved.

He kissed the back of her hand and mumbled "Rest Natasha. Now no one will trouble you. I love you. Always have, always will."

He then clutched the little hand of Scarlett and kissed it gently as he did with Natasha.

"No need to be afraid, little Scarlett. Your Mumma is with you. Sleep sweety."

He then pulled away even though he wanted to stay with them. He didn't want them to leave him.

No one said anything even though all was confused about his relationship with her.

It was then Liam decided that he had to do it. He had to say goodbye to his daughter and his love.

He sat down on his knees and grabbed Natasha's hand just like Scott did.

It took every ounce of power for Scott to control himself from pulling his hand away from her.

But he didn't want to create any scene at her funeral. It was supposed to give her peace.

"I am so sorry, Natasha. Please forgive me. I had given you nothing but problems. I was supposed to take care of you and look at what I did. Please forgive me. I love you."

He was crying through his speech. He doesn't want to believe that she is dead.

He had never cared about her when she was alive and here he was crying at his funeral.

He left her hand and caressed her cheek. He leaned down to kiss her lips one last time.

He then turned to say goodbye to his kid. His flesh. His blood. Which he never had accepted till her death.

"You were the most beautiful girl I had ever seen after your mother. I am sorry, baby, that I couldn't be the father you deserve. Forgive me, Scarlett. I love you."

Just as he was about to touch her cheek, he heard the most dangerous voice he had ever heard.

"Don't you dare touch her"

He froze and pulled back his hand and turned back to face the terrifying woman who was on a mission.

The mission to kill him.

.

.

.

Kelly took a step forward with a cold face. There was no emotion on her face.

She had cried enough and promised herself that she won't cry anymore.

She wanted to destroy the man who was standing in front of her. How dare he try to touch her Scarlett?

She took another threatening step and stood in front of him. She looked at his face which was filled with tears.

She scoffed loudly and without warning punched him hard. He stumbled but that didn't subsidize her anger.

She slapped him this time and didn't stop until Adam pulled her back.

"Leave me. I'll kill that bastard. You are dead, Liam Knights." She screamed and wriggled in Adam's arm.

"Stop, Kelly. Why are you hitting him?" Adam asked her in confusion

She turned to face him and stared into his blue eyes with surprise. He was just like the last time she had seen him.

But now it was not the time to focus on him. It was about her best friend who was lying there in the casket with her daughter.

She removed his hands from her and moved toward Liam who was wiping the blood from his lips.

His cheeks had turned red due to the force of her slap. For a woman who was supposed to have some hands, she sure hit like a man.

She again looked at Adam and she knew that moment that he knew nothing about his best friend's deed.

Her lips curled into a cold smirk and she smiled. An evil smile was adoring her lips making her look dangerous.

"Adam doesn't know about your deed, Liam. Does he?" She laughed loudly

"Want me to tell him. Adam, do you know the relationship between Liam and Natasha?" She asked him

The last thing she wanted to do was create a scene at her best friend's funeral.

But all her thoughts went onto the ground when she saw him here. He doesn't deserve anywhere to be here.

He had killed her best friend. And now he wanted to do drama to save himself.

"I will tell you. He had trapped her in the game of love for sex. And when get what he wanted, he left her in the middle of the forest."

The people who were whispering from the time Kelly arrived, stopped when they heard her confession.

Natasha's family was shocked to know about their son's best friend's reality.

They knew Liam since Adam befriended him. They were best of friends.

When Adam informs them, Liam is the father of Natasha's child. They were shocked and were sad for him.

But now it seems like everything was a facade. They never knew him.

"He never called her after that. When she went to tell him that she was pregnant then he called her a whore and a bastard child."

"He even called their child a bastard. He threw a cheque on her face for her payment that night."

She laughed without any emotions in her voice. Every emotion inside her died when she got to know from Scott that Natasha is dead.

Her best friend left her alone. She had cried and just cried until she passed out.

Now it was time for Liam to get his punishment. He was living his life in peace while her best friend had been fighting to survive.

"No, he didn't just stop there. He got her raped just because she reported him to the cop who was nothing but a pig."

"He snatched everything from her. He snatched her job, her house and in the end, he snatched her life. He killed her. He had ordered his men to kill her."

This time she couldn't control the tears of grief and devastation which she desperately wanted to.

She grabbed the collar of his shirt and shook him and shouted "Why did you come into her life? She was living before you entered her life."

"After meeting you, her tears never stopped. She never smiled. You ruined her. You made her destiny cruel."

She pushed him and yelled "I hate you, Liam. I hate you more than I hate Adam. You ruined everything you touch."

She wiped her tears which never stopped falling and said "I pray to god that he won't kill you easily. You will see hell on this earth. Mark my words."

She pushed him aside and leaned toward Natasha's body and kissed her head and whispered "You are free, Naty. I love you, sweety. See you soon."

She kissed Scarlett's cheek and said "My baby girl. Sleep peacefully. You are not alone."

She cried hard but continued "My baby would be there with you. Take care of her too, Scar. You are her big sister."

She covered her mouth to control her sobs which weren't stopping. Scott came forward and put her hand on her shoulder in a comforting way.

She stood straight and he hugged her. She cried her heart out. She wanted it to be a dream.

She wanted Natasha to be alive but it was god's wish. And she couldn't do anything about it.

In a way, she was happy because now her friend was free from the cruelty this world had shown her.

The casket had been closed and lowered in the ground. They all prayed for her and threw the dust on the casket.

Andrea fainted when she saw her daughter's casket getting eased to the ground.

Her husband took her inside knowing that she couldn't bear watching it.

Now it was done. Everything was over. They had buried her and now all went back to the church.

The only person who remained there were Scott, Kelly, Liam, and a very angry Adam.

He was burning in anger since the time he got to know what Liam had done with his sister.

He just controlled it so that there would be no disturbance at her funeral.

He raged toward Liam who was staring at his sister's grave. He punched him hard making him fall to the ground.

He knelt and beat him up, let out all his anger and frustration on him.

"Stop Adam. You will kill him. He doesn't deserve death. He should taste the slap of Karma. Leave him." Kelly said with a cold voice.

Adam stooped when he heard her voice. Her voice has a different effect on her. Always had and always will.

"You are no longer my friend, Liam. I.." He stopped and wiped the salty tears from the back of his hand.

Then he took a deep breath and continued "You made her life hell. You will regret it."

.

.

.

Linda was standing outside the cemetery as her mother warned her not to go inside.

She was upset to hear about the death of the person who was so sweet.

There was an unknown fear which was engulfing her. She took a deep breath.

Something in her gut was telling her that something bad was going to happen. Something which she couldn't control.

She placed her hand on her stomach and waited for Liam to come back.

But when he didn't, she entered the cemetery ignoring all the warning signs.

She wandered a little and found him crying in front of Natasha's grave.

His lip was split open and blood was oozing out of it. He had a black eye and his cheeks were going to bruise.

She sighed and went toward him. He was sobbing and asking for forgiveness from Natasha.

"Liam," she said and touched his cheek gently.

He turned toward her and hugged her legs and mumbled "She will never forgive me."

"Don't cry, Liam. You are injured right now. Come on let's go home." She said.

She was in desperate need to be out of here. Something was not right. She has to go home, that's what her gut feeling has been telling.

She followed it and took Liam toward the car. She was about to sit at the driver's seat when he stopped her.

"I am driving." He rasped and sat without waiting for her answer.

She pressed her lips together and sat on the passenger seat without saying anything.

Liam started the engine and drove the car toward their home.

His mind was not on the road. He could see the dead body of his love and their daughter.

He didn't cry that much when he received the news of Miranda's and their child's death.

He wiped the tears away. Linda saw this and said "Liam please let me drive. You are not focused."

He looked at her and said "You are pregnant. You shouldn't drive. It will harm our baby."

Her breath stuck in her throat. This was the first time she had heard him saying 'Our baby'

She wanted to smile and thanked god that he had accepted their baby but her trance was broken by the sound of a horn.

Her face turned into horror when she saw an SUV coming toward them.

She shouted "Liam watch out"

But alas she was late. The SUV came at a high speed and bumped into them.

!!!



Chapter 37

Third Person POV

Linda screamed when the SUV hit their car. The force behind the crash was so much that their car turned over many times.

Even though she was wearing a seat belt, that couldn't save her from hitting her stomach on the end.

Liam on the other side had suffered the tremendous impact of the smash.

The windshield of the car broke and pierced the nerves of his hand. He could feel the agony in his entire body.

Something broke inside his body and he couldn't move his body. His legs were stuck and something heavy fell on them.

He let out a scream in anguish and the last thing he saw was a white light then everything was blank.

Someone, who had seen this accident, called paramedics. They reached the spot of the accident and rushed them to the hospital.

Linda was bleeding but still, her injury was not much visible other than the blood trickling down her legs.

Liam, on the other hand, was covered in blood as he was not wearing the seat belt.

He was so lost in his grief that he had forgotten to wear it and it made his injury severe.

They took both to the ER and after scanning their injury they shifted them to the ICU.

.

.

.

Liam opened his eyes and saw that he was alone. He was in a beautiful garden which couldn't be found on earth.

OBJ

He was confused about his whereabouts. The last thing he remembered was getting into an accident.

He inspected his body and found that he wasn't injured. His body was in a good condition as he was before the accident.

He wandered a little and stopped when he heard a humming voice.

He followed the voice and found someone sitting under a Magnolia tree.



He went near that person and asked "Who are you?"

The person giggled and stood up and turned toward him. His breath stuck in his throat when he saw that it was none other than Natasha.

She was looking so beautiful in a white dress. She was always a nymph for him but now she was one in real life.



There was a glow and peace on her face which he had never seen. She was smiling and that was making her more alluring.

"Hello, Liam" she greeted him with her angelic voice

"Natasha" her name rolled off his tongue

"Am I dead?" He asked her the question which he had been waiting to ask.

"Right now, no. But you are in the middle. I just reached here last night." She told him with a smile.

A smile which he thought he would never see. A smile which he so badly wanted to watch on her face.

He went near her and said "I am so sorry. Please forgive me. Take me with you. I don't want to stay without you."

She just smiled and ignored his apology. Then started "God had asked me something when your accident happened."

"He wanted to know if I wanted you to die and stay with us. I denied him" she confessed.

With a smile on her beautiful face, she continued "I would have forgiven you if it was about me. But no, you killed our daughter too."

"I would have forgiven everyone who had wrong me. But for what they had done with my daughter, I won't forgive them."

He saw as she sighed and turned her back on him. She picked a baby out of the crib which he had not seen.

When she turned back toward him with Scarlett in her arms, he froze.

OBJ

She was so beautiful and innocent just like her mother. But what he loved most was her eyes.

She had his eyes. Deep blue orbs that could hypnotize everyone. That's what she was doing with him.

He moved his hands to take her but Natasha moved back and with a smile said "No"

Tears filled in his eyes and he begged "Please let me hold her. Please I am begging you."

She just smiled and said "No liam. You do not deserve to touch her. She is angry with you. You humiliated her."

Still, the smile was plastered on her lips. She is now at peace and away from all the cruelty.

The tears started to fall from his eyes. He so badly wanted to touch his daughter who was staring at him with a pout.

"You have done wrong, Liam. And you will be punished for it." She told him with a peaceful look.

He looked at them with longing and said "Let me stay here with you all. I love you."

"Now the decision is not in my hand. We have already decided on your punishment." She replied to him while bouncing a laughing Scarlett in her arms.

"I didn't tell anyone to kill you, Nat. I haven't even told anyone to snatch your job and your house. I -"

He was cut off by a chuckle. She just stared at him for a few seconds and replied in her angelic voice.

"I know everything. Everything from starting and about your Miranda too. Let's just say, she had fooled you, Liam."

"You know I am wearing the dress which I had imagined when you said that you would marry me." She said with a sad chuckle.

"I had a lot of dreams. Dreams with you and Scarlett but you had crushed them with your hands."

She looked behind him and said "You have to leave. You are going back to get your punishment which you deserve."

She took a step toward him and stood so close to him that she was almost touching him.

"And when the right time comes, we will come to take you with us."

She touched his cheek which was wet with his tears and said "Till then, goodbye."

"Are you happy?" He asked her suddenly

She gave him a hearty smile and said "I am finally at peace."

With that, she disappeared within seconds. He looked around and called her over and over again.

"Natasha, please come back. Take me with you."

But all he heard was her giggles.

.

.

.

He suddenly gasped when his eyes opened. There was an immense pain in his body.

He was feeling dizzy and his legs were numb. He looked around and saw that he was in the hospital.

The room was white and he looked around and saw a nurse standing a little away from him.

'Where were Natasha and Scarlett.' He thought to himself

Then all memory hit him like a truck at high speed. The call, Natasha's death, the funeral, and the accident.

'Linda. Oh god, where was she? Is she ok? Is the baby ok?' These questions were roaming inside his head.

He observed that there were numerous wires attached to his body. There was an ugly looking thing covering his legs.

He cleared his throat to catch the attention of the nurse. She looked at him with surprise and called the doctor.

The doctor came inside the room and with a smile said "Welcome to the world, Mr. Liam."

"How long have I been out?" He asked in a hoarse voice

His throat was parched and it hurts while talking. He asked for water and the nurse gave it to him.

The doctor waited for a few seconds then said "It's been 2 months"

He let him digest the information for a couple of seconds then continued "To be honest, it's a miracle that you are even alive."

Liam was stunned when he heard the news regarding his situation. How does time pass so quickly?

He got into that accident yesterday. There must be something wrong.

"How's Linda? And my child? She is pregnant." He asked him in concern

The doctor sighed and said, "I am sorry to say Mr. Liam but she miscarried that child."

Liam shook his head, denying to believe the lie. Their child couldn't be dead.

He had already lost his two children and now he couldn't bear the thought of losing his other child.

He gave a cold stare to the doctor and seethed "you have been lying since I woke up. Stop lying"

He ended up coughing and the nurse again gave him a sip of water.

The doctor's face didn't falter. He just gave him a sad smile and said "I am not lying, Mr. Liam"

"The accident was fatal but it didn't affect Miss Jones that much. She had miscarried her child but there was no other injury surprisingly."

"If you want to know further then you have to talk to Dr. Allen. He was the one who had handled her case."

Liam cried when he heard that his third child had died too. Kelly was right.

He ruined everything he had touched. He wanted to accept their child but again Karma punished him.

He was suffocating from inside. He wanted to die this instant and be free from all this burden.

He wanted to stay with Natasha and his children. But suddenly he remembered her words.

He could hear them and wondered if anyone could listen to them too.

"And when the right time comes, we will come to take you with us."

He wanted to wipe his tears but he couldn't raise his hand. And when he tried, he screamed in pain.

"Mr. Liam, don't move." The doctor advised him.

"But the accident had a major effect on you. The glass from the windshield had pierced your nerves. When the car turned, your arm and legs were crushed under it."

"You have a thoracic spinal cord injury. As a result, you are paralyzed from the waist down."

"You have broken your right arm as you had fallen on your outstretched hand."

"We have performed the surgery on your arm but still you will never be able to use it a hundred percent."

"About your leg, you had also broken your left leg. The fall was severe as your bone was poking out."

"Surgery on your left leg had been completed too. But it won't do any good."

The doctor took a deep breath and wondered how he was still alive.

It seemed like god wanted him to be alive for a purpose. But what surprised him was that Miss Jones didn't get injured.

She had just lost the child as something had bumped into her stomach.

But still, it was a shock. His patient had been out for 2 months. He had even told his parents to be prepared for anything.

But his parents wanted him to be alive at any cost or they would snatch his job.

'Rich people and their attitude.' The doctor thought in his mind.

"What's the conclusion?" Liam asked and turned his face to the side.

Now there was nothing left in his life. Everything was snatched from him.

First his love, then his children, and now his ability to move and walk.

He will be now dependable on others. He will never walk and that moment something hit him hard.

It was Karma. It had punished him most brutally. It had taken everything he held dearly from him.

That's what Natasha was feeling when he took her will to have sex with anyone.

That's what she was feeling when she got raped. She wanted it to stop but it never did.

"You would never be able to walk. You won't be able to use your right hand. I am sorry. Take some rest. I'll send your parents inside."

With that, the doctor left the room.

.

.

.

James knights who was known as the devil knight in the entire world was shattered when he saw the condition of his child.

The one he loved with all his heart. He had never given that love to his daughter Brianna.

She was a mistake. He had never wanted to have another baby after Liam.

He always wanted his first child to be a boy because they are the ruler of the house.

Female is nothing more than the hole to fuck and bear their children.

His daughter will be the same too but for some other man which he will choose.

He entered the room and saw Liam watching out of the window of the room while lying down on his bed.

His son's eyes were shedding tears. He had to be strong for his son. His son will be alright.

He will hire the best doctor for him. He had to be alright. He is the heir of the Knights Enterprises.

"Liam" he called out sadly.

His son turned his face and looked at him with tears falling down his face.

But he wasn't prepared for the emotion he has seen in his eyes. Betrayal and anger.

"Why did you do that, dad?" Liam asked him in anger.

He was taken aback by his tone. He was indeed angry but why?

"What are you saying, son?" He questioned him

Liam chuckled coldly and said "You know what I am talking about. Why did you ruin her life?"

His eyes widened and he knew that moment that he was caught. The sins he had been doing were exposed in front of his son.

Before he could defend himself, Liam continued "You sent that bastard Seth to her house and snatched her savings."

"You got her fired from her job and told everyone not to hire her."

"You bought her apartment where she was staying and got her kicked out of her apartment where she had been staying."

"But last not least, you killed her. You told your man to kill her when I called you to cancel my wedding with Linda."

"I had told you that I am going to marry Natasha. You got her killed so that I won't marry her."

"You killed my child too." Liam sobbed hard

"I hate you, dad. I hated you since the moment you raised your hand on my mother."

His eyes were throwing glares at his father and he hissed "But now I loathe you."

"Go from here. Out" he shouted

When his dad didn't move, he yelled "Out"

James knights wiped the tear which he had shed after a long time and whispered "I am sorry."

"Sorry can never bring back the dead person," Liam whispered and closed his eyes.

.

.

.

Linda entered the hospital with a dead look in her eyes. She had lost the most precious thing in her life.

Her fiance was in the hospital bed with no hope of life. She didn't know what to say to him.

She opened the door of his room and came inside. Liam was now staring at the ceiling with tears in his eyes.

The cut on his face was healed as she was one week late. She didn't know how she would react after meeting him.

But now finally she had gained her courage and decided to meet him after all he was her fiance.

"Liam," she mumbled softly

His eyes fell on her and he mumbled the world which he has been saying for a while.

"I am sorry, Linda." He apologized to her.

"It's okay. That baby was not in our destiny. Now there is no need to cry over spilled milk." She told him while toward him.

"How are you?" She asked him with a small smile

"Dead." He replied

"Don't say that. You will be fine, don't worry. I'll help you." She told him.

Liam looked at her with a surprising emotion and stuttered "You still want to stay with me."

"I loved you, Liam. I did with all my heart. But now I can't say the same."

She sighed and continued "But I will not leave you. I will stay with you. I am not that type of woman who leaves her man when he has gotten into a problem."

At that moment, Liam realized something. He had to let her go. He had to let her free so that she could enjoy her life.

He will never be able to give her happiness. He had only one mission in his life.

To wait for Natasha to come back and take him with her. He didn't want to live anymore without her.

With his left hand, he caressed her cheek and whispered "I'm releasing you, Linda. You are free."

!!!

Epilogue

Third Person POV

When there is a good time, it passes quickly. But when it gives nothing but pain and misery, it doesn't end.

That's what Liam was feeling when he stopped telling his story to the woman who was working as his physiotherapist.

He didn't need that but that was his mother's last wish. Not that he had heard it from her.

His sister had informed him about it. It had been a long time since he talked to them.

"Then what happened," Tanya asked him curiously.

She sympathized with him. She knew that he had made a mistake and he has been paying for it.

But now years have passed. He should get relief and peace from this life.

When her senior had informed her about his case, she wanted to deny it because there was no hope for him.

'He would never be able to walk 'that's what she had replied to her senior.

But still, he insisted and she wanted to ask so many questions.

'Why does his sister insist that she wanted him to walk? He could never do that' she questioned him

Her senior just sighed and said 'He is my father's friend. My father had hated him but now he forgave him. Please, Tanya.'

She just sighed at that time and accepted it. She remembered the first time she met him.

Even at the age of 66, he was good looking. He was a man of few words until he came out of his shell.

She had seen him talking with a picture and when she asked him about it, he became silent.

He didn't tell her anything about it until recently. When she first heard his deed, she thought that he deserved it.

He had ruined that innocent girl's life but she pitied him after knowing his past with Miranda.

When she heard him coughing, she snapped out of her thoughts. She rushed toward him and gave him some water.

[No corona in the story]

He had been doing it for some time. She looked at his aged face and saw nothing but misery.

"Thank you, Tanya," he said with a smile on his wrinkled face.

"After that, I didn't let my father meet me. I stopped talking to him and when Adam informed my sister and mother about it, they stopped talking to me as well." He continued

"It was not a good time for me. I had no one. And at that moment, I got to know Natasha had been feeling all along"

"With no support of family or friends, it had gotten hard."

He coughed again. He has not been feeling good lately. He removed his hand and saw blood again.

He took the handkerchief with his shaky hands and wiped it clean. He didn't need a nurse for this, that's why he didn't call her.

"Again?" She asked him with a worried expression.

He just chuckled and said "Don't worry, dear. I am fine. For now,"

"What did the doctor say?" She asked him again.

He just shrugged a little. It was his age of death anyway. Death, which he has been waiting for eagerly.

Maybe it was the time Natasha was talking about. Maybe he will see them soon.

That thought brought a smile to his face. He had waited for this moment for 43 years.

[His age is 70]

He will see his daughter and his love after so many years. He didn't know he was crying until Tanya handed him a tissue.

"You are thinking about them again." She stated.

She had known him for 4 years. Now she knew about whenever he cried which means he was thinking about them.

"I always am." He replied to her.

"I am feeling tired, dear. It's my time to sleep." He replied even though he wasn't feeling that sleepy.

He wanted some moments to think. Tanya nodded and said, "I'll meet you tomorrow then."

"I won't be so sure about it." He replied and she gave him a confused stare.

He just shook his head and said "nothing. Goodbye, Tanya."

Still confused, she turned back and went back to her house.

Not knowing that this would be the last time she has ever got to see him.

.

.

.

It was nighttime when the sun descended and the moon took its place instead.

Liam was staring at the ceiling and was coughing badly. The doctor came and took the sample for examination.

The results of that will come tomorrow. His life had turned drastically.

All because he had ruined an innocent life. Had he known this would happen, he would have never done that.

But it was his Karma. The last 43 years were the worst years of his life.

No one was there for him. When his family got to know about his deeds, they stopped talking to him.

Her mother asked for a divorce from his father, but his father didn't give her.

She left the house with his sister and never came back until her husband's funeral.

James knights, who could do anything or he thought, was induced with a deadly skin disease.

His father had Pemphigus Vulgaris. The chances of his survival were minimum.

He had died within one year but in that, he had died daily with the pain.

[Pemphigus Vulgaris is a rare autoimmune disease that causes painful blistering on the skin and mucous membranes. If you have an autoimmune disease, your immune system mistakenly attacks your healthy tissues.]

He had gone to his funeral as he was his father. But the main reason was to visit Natasha's grave again.

He also met his sister and mother but they behaved like they didn't know him.

He had met Adam 1 year back. He was very happy to see him after so many years.

Adam had finally forgiven him and now he was feeling good. Finally, all was fine between them.

But now they don't have what they really needed. Time. The time which he doesn't have.

His eyes were now feeling heavy. Before sleeping, he whispered the words which he has been mumbling daily.

"I love you, Natasha. Take me with you."

.

.

.

He heard the giggles which he had heard before. He opened his eyes when he felt someone touching his hair.

He woke up and saw that it was Natasha sitting on his bed. She was combing his hair with her slender fingers.

"Hello, Liam."

With a stunned expression, he just stared at her. He couldn't believe that she was finally here.

The moment he had been waiting for had come. She was still wearing that Angel dress.

"Natasha," he whispered.

She just hummed and said, "You have aged."

"What are you doing here?" He blurted out

She gave him a beautiful smile which made him fall for her all over again.

"I had promised you that I would come to take you with me when your time comes."

She caressed his cheek and whispered, "It's your time."

She stood up and stretched her hand to him. Instantly, he grabbed her hand afraid that she would leave him.

He couldn't believe that he was using his right hand after so many years.

He stood up on those legs which were broken before. But now they were perfectly fine.

He looked at their joined hand and saw that there were no wrinkles.

She must have noticed his surprised look and took him and made him stand in front of a Mirror.

He couldn't believe what he saw in the mirror. He was just like he was 43 years ago when he was 27.

"Come on, Liam." She said with a smile.

When he turned back, he startled. The old Liam was lying on the bed with a peaceful smile on his face.

She took him to the steps which lead to the place where they would be staying.

She opened the door and entered and told him to wait here. She went inside and came back with Scarlett in her arms.

His lips curled into a smile when he saw his daughter who was in her mother's arms with a beautiful smile.

She was smiling at him. He forwarded his hands to take her but stopped in the middle.

Natasha came forward and handed her to him. He almost cried when his daughter rested her head on his chest.

"She forgave you a long time ago," Natasha told him

"And I forgave you too." She continued with a beautiful smile.

"I am so sorry, Natasha. No matter how many I have said that. I am still sorry." He told her

She just giggled and said, "I have been hearing that too every night."

She forwarded her hand and he grabbed it quickly which made her chuckle.

"Let's start again." She told him.

He just hugged her and now he was happy that he had got what he had been wanting.

His family.

"I love you Natasha and I love you too Scarlett." He whispered and kissed their head.

"We love you too." She replied

Scarlett just yawned and again put her head on his chest, cuddling to him.

They chuckled and went toward their destination where no one could separate them again.

Where no Cruel Destiny exists.

The End

!!!

But please don't message and comment to me that the original ending was better and we don't like it.

No one is forcing you to read the alternate ending.

I have left the choice to you all.

Till then



Alternate Ending Chapter 29

The first half or part of the chapter is the same as the original one.

Natasha POV [7 and half months Pregnant]

Have you ever felt like God hates you so much that he wanted you to suffer?

I am feeling like this right now. It's like every door is closed for me and I have nowhere to go.

Last night after Liam's father's visit, I didn't know that the next morning would be torture for me.

I went to the restaurant as always but this time something felt wrong.

My stomach clenched in nervousness but still, I went inside and saw the owner and his wife arguing.

I stepped toward them and asked "What happened? Is everything alright?"

For the first time, I have seen hate and anger in Mr. Cameron's wife (Owner's wife).

I was taken aback when I saw it. She has always been good to me. So what happened now?

She just clenched her jaw and turned toward her husband and said "Do it otherwise we will be homeless."

She then glared at me and said "You are fired."

My jaw was on the floor when I heard those from her mouth. She has just fired me but why?

"But why?" I asked her bewildered

"It's nothing, Natasha. You go inside. No one is firing you." Mr. Cameron said

"No" His wife shouted "You are not thinking clearly. Just fired her or I will leave you."

"Would you mind telling me what happened?" I asked them wearily

"Mr. Knights called and told us to fire you or else he would take over our restaurant." His wife sighed.

I was shocked because I didn't know that Liam would do something like that.

I thought that maybe he would leave me alone after that night if I fulfilled his wishes.

But no he still isn't leaving me. I looked at Mr. Cameron's face. He was looking tense and I caught the glimpse of fear in it.

He had done a lot for me. He had sheltered me in his home when I was homeless and was on the roads.

He is very old and this restaurant is the only source of his and his family's income.

Even though it's mine too but maybe I can find another job. I have to repay their gratitude.

"Ok. I'll leave. Tell Mr. Knights that I won't come here again." I whispered in a heavy voice

I turned my back and took a step toward the door when I heard Mr. Cameron's voice.

"You are not leaving Natasha. It's the only job you have."

I wiped the lone tear which fell from my eyes and turned back to face them.

I gave them a small smile and said "I know but I'll be alright. I don't want to be selfish here. You have done a lot for me. It's time for me to pay you back."

"But how will you manage as you are pregnant?" He questioned me with concern.

I opened my mouth but I was cut off by his wife "the father of her child will take care of them."

I wanted to laugh as well as cry after hearing her words. Liam would take care of me and my baby?

He won't do shit. He just knows how to mess with someone's life.

I really don't know what happened to her. The reason behind her behavior is a mystery to me

She has changed a lot. She was not like this. She had been polite with me but that stopped when I got pregnant.

Maybe she thinks that I had become a whore. Or worse. I just shrugged and said, "I'll take care of myself."

I turned back and walked outside. I took a deep breath and shuddered when the cold breeze hit me.

I only had this job but not anymore. I sat on the bench in the park and stared at the children who were enjoying the snow.

The snow has been falling since morning making the surroundings colder than before.

I have never thought that I would see this day. I looked above at the sky and sighed when a snowflake fell on my red cheek.

Had it been some other time, I would probably be enjoying it as I love snowfall.

But now I can't. I am now jobless and I have to find a job quickly or it will be very bad.

I wish I could call Kelly and share with her my problems. But I just can't.

Why are you doing this with me, Liam? Why?

.

.

.

I have been trying to find a job in this city but no one is ready to take me.

As days were passing, my hope to find a job has been diminishing. I really need a job or I will be on the streets.

After a day of wandering around the city for the job, I was exhausted. My legs were aching along with my body.

I looked down and forwarded my swollen feet and saw that they were demanding some rest.

I laid down on the bed and a whimpered left my lips when it touched my throbbing back.

It was hurting. My belly is now prominent as I have been losing weight.

I should have gained it but due to the limited amount of money, I couldn't buy the right food for myself.

I have been eating once a day which I know is not good for my health but I am helpless here.

I turned on my side as tears started to fall from my eyes. Why does my destiny have to be cruel?

I didn't know when I fell asleep while crying. I was in a deep sleep but I still could hear the voice of someone.

I woke up with a jerk when I heard the noise of something falling on the floor.

The sweat beads started to form on my forehead. Who might be here?

I pressed my trembling lips together. I was so scared. I got out of bed slowly without making any noises.

I looked around the room to find something to save myself from the intruder.

A tear fell from my eyes when I saw nothing that could attack that intruder.

I wiped it and saw a pair of heels on the floor which I had never touched after my date with him.

It might not do something enormous to them but it's better to have something rather than nothing.

I put my hand on my belly and staggered toward them. I bent a little down to pick them up.

"Stop where you are?"

I froze when I heard the cold voice of someone. I had heard this voice somewhere.

I stood straight and looked at them. My blood froze in my veins when I gazed at the person who had raped me.

Why did he come here? Will he rape me again? I don't think this time I could survive it.

"What are you doing here?" I asked him even though it sounded stupid.

There was a different man with him this time who was gazing at the door from time to time.

The person, who had raped me, just smirked and looked at me from head to toe making me tremble in fear.

I don't know what his intention was but it was not good that I could say the way he was gawking at me.

"You know I always had a thing for pregnant women. That's why Mr. Liam had chosen me." He laughed

His laugh was so scary. It had a lot of malice hidden behind it, making it more terrifying.

I took a step back when he stepped toward me. I looked behind it and saw that the other person was still gazing at the main door.

He caressed my cheek and I flinched hard. I don't want him to touch me. I don't want to be touched by anyone.

"Still so beautiful." He said

The lust was dripping from his words. Now I do not have any doubt about the intention with which he came here.

"Don't touch me," I whispered and shoved his hand away.

I felt a strong contraction and I screamed in pain. My legs were giving up and I was about to fall but that person pushed me to the bed.

He hovered over me and leaned toward my lips. I pushed him with all my strength and he fell.

I won't be raped this time. I won't let him touch me. It's my body and no one else.

"Alex, stop" the other person shouted with a loud voice as if he wanted to wake the whole world up and for that I am grateful.

Maybe after his voice, someone can come to save me. That's what I was hoping for.

The person, Alex, who was molesting me, glared at his partner and whispered yelled "Don't shout"

"Mr. Knights told us not to touch her. Don't do that man" his partner again yelled.

"Would you stop fucking shouting? She is going to die anyway. Then why not taste that pussy last time." Alex shrugged

My heart came into my mouth when I heard him talking about killing me. He would kill me.

I felt something trickling down my legs. Oh god. Am I going into labor?

It's so early as I was only 7 and a half months pregnant. I am so scared right now.

Tears started to fall from my eyes when he again loomed over me and started to pull on my shirt.

I screamed and felt a sting on my face. He slapped me again and grabbed my jaw in his big hands.

"Stop moving and take it like you did last time." He seethed

He pulled back a little and smirked "or you need a little motivation."

He pulled a knife out of his pocket and grinned "Just like last time."

I sobbed loudly and shouted "Help"

I didn't stop shouting until I felt a strong punch on my cheek making me scream in agony.

"Shut up bitch." He sneered and pulled my t-shirt over my head now I was bare as I wasn't wearing a bra.

I wriggled again and he put the knife on the side of my stomach, just like he did last time.

"Now stop moving." He whispered yelled at me.

I stopped moving just like last time. I closed my eyes tightly when I felt his hands on my lower.

Just as he was about to pull it down, we all heard a soft but scared voice with a knock on the door.

"Naty where are you?"

Kelly is here. Oh god, my soul sister is here. But what if they would hurt her too.

"Shit, Alex we have to leave." The second person yelled.

"How did that person come here? Didn't I tell you to shut the door?" Alex asked that person.

The person just shrugged and said "I forgot"

He just glared at him and turned to me. He pulled back the knife and stabbed me on the side of my stomach, making me howl in pain.

[Like in Annabelle movie :-(]

"Naty. Where are you?" I could hear Kelly scared voice and her hurried footsteps

He then put his hands on my neck and started to strangle me. I choked on my breath and moved my hands.

The other person grabbed him and pulled him away from me and yelled "We have to leave."

Alex groaned and ran toward the window. The person looked at me in concern and whispered "You will get help soon."

He too ran and I saw them with blurring eyes running from the window.

The last I heard before losing was consciousness was the sound of the opening of the door and Kelly's scared voice.

"NATASHA"

.

.

.

Third Person POV

Kelly was pacing the store where she was working part-time. It's not like she had to work.

She just wanted to keep herself sane. She didn't make any friends here so to keep herself busy she started to work here.

She has a lot of money which her grandparents had left for her. She doesn't want to use her parent's money.

She hadn't talked to her mother in the past year since she came here.

Her mother had never liked Natasha. She didn't like what her mother had done with Natasha in the past.

After that day, Natasha never came to her house and she too didn't force her.

"What happened Kelly? Why are you pacing the floor?" The store manager came and asked her

She stopped and looked at her with irritation. Why did she have to interfere with her thoughts?

She just faked a smile and replied "Nothing, Mrs.Smith. I wanted to ask for leave."

She just sighed and said "I can't do that Kelly. If you left today then never come back."

Kelly looked at her with narrow eyes and finally tired of her shitty attitude.

"Ok, then I am leaving this job."

With that, she ran out not hearing anything her former boss was saying.

Her priority is Natasha right now. She didn't attend her calls for almost 2 months.

And now she was worried. It had never happened to them. They both had always attended each other's call.

She ran to her house and packed some clothes in a duffle bag. She picked up her car keys not bothering to change her clothes.

After locking the door of her apartment, she hurried toward her car.

She was having a bad feeling since last night when she had a nightmare.

She had seen Natasha's blood in her hand and her friend was not waking up.

She has been calling her since morning but she got no answer.

Now she didn't even wait to book the flight as it would take time. So she decided to drive instead.

It took her at least 3 hours to reach the front of her apartment. She grabbed her bag and walked toward her building.

She would stay with her for a few days and would make sure that she was alright.

Or she could drag Natasha with her to her house so that she could take care of her till Scarlett's birth.

Or she could convince Natasha to stay with her so that she won't have to worry about her safety.

She shook her hand and walked inside the building. She passed the receptionist who nodded at her.

She greeted her and went toward Natasha's apartment. She tried to ring the bell but it wasn't working.

She frowned and again tried but nothing happened. She knocked on the door and with a scary voice asked

"Naty, where are you?"

She again knocked but Natasha didn't answer her. She was now scared and that turned into dread when she heard the most painful sound.

It was Natasha's scream of pain.

She tried to open the door and saw that it was unlocked. She walked inside and grabbed the saucepan from the kitchen.

Her heart was thundering in her chest. She rushed toward the bedroom and opened the door.

Her blood turned cold when she saw Natasha lying on the bed. Her upper body was bare and blood was soaking the sheets.

She shouted her name and turned her face to the side when she heard the voice.

She saw two people rushing out of her window. She ran toward them and saw them running.

Rage boiled inside her and she threw the saucepan with a force and it hit Alex.

He screamed in pain and fell on his knees. The blood started to gush from his head which was split open.

The person beside him, Elliot, ran leaving him alone. Now her friend could save that pregnant girl.

He didn't want to harm her and he tried his best to save her. He left her door open even after Alex telling him to close it.

He made a noise by dropping a vase on the floor so that she could wake up.

He shouted while talking to Alex so that someone could hear it. This was the first time Mr. Knights had sent him with someone to kill a person.

He had never killed anyone. He just sells drugs to feed his pregnant wife.

Kelly ran toward Natasha and saw that there was a big gash in the side of her belly.

The blood wasn't stopping. She grabbed Natasha's phone with shaky hands and dialed 911.

She told them the condition of Natasha and they said that they would be there in a few minutes.

She wiped her tears and picked up the blanket and pressed to her side to control the blood which was oozing out of her wound.

She grabbed the t-shirt and made her wear it with difficulty. She mentally thanked god that she came here within time.

She called Scott and he picked it up within minutes and said "Hello Natasha"

There was desperation and happiness in his voice which made her confused for a few seconds.

Then she shook her head and said "Scott, it's me, Kelly."

"Oh" he whispered, disappointed

"Scott someone broke into Natasha's house and he stabbed her belly with a knife." She sobbed.

Then she continued "I have called 911. It will be here within minutes. I am scared."

"Kelly, don't worry. Take her to the hospital. I'll be there. I won't let anything happen to both of them." He assured her.

The paramedics came and took her to the hospital. They rushed her to the ICU with Kelly standing outside the room.

Scott came to the hospital as they had called him for the emergency which he knew what was.

He saw Kelly standing outside the ICU with tears running down her cheeks.

She saw him coming and said "Scott, she is inside. I don't know what is happening."

She was overwhelmed with so many emotions. She was scared, angry, and sad for Natasha.

"Hey, it's okay. I'll handle it." He said, tried to be brave.

But from inside he was scared. He didn't know what would greet him after stepping inside.

He was dreading it but he knew that he had to save both Natasha and her baby.

When he entered inside, he saw her on the hospital bed lying there without any movement.

He shook his head and moved toward the bed where many doctors and nurses were working on her.

"Thank god you are here Dr. Scott. Someone attacked her with a knife on her stomach. And I have checked, her water broke too." A fellow doctor told him.

"Some blood was flowing out of her vagina. The patient's relative had informed us that you were handling her case." He continued

Scott just hummed and nodded his head. He didn't know what to say. He was numbed and his hands were trembling.

The woman he loved was lying on the hospital bed. He couldn't lose her. He had already lost his child and his wife before.

According to the tests, they have to perform Cesarean Section right now or they could lose both mother and child.

A nurse went outside to inform Kelly about it and she agreed to it. Anything to save her best friend.

It took almost one hour to complete the surgery. They had delivered Scarlett easily.

Scott felt immense happiness when he heard her soft cry. It was barely there as she was a premature baby.

He wanted to cry in joy when he saw her. She was the beautiful baby he had delivered.

Or maybe he was being partial as she was his love's baby. But she was so beautiful just like Natasha.

He stitched Natasha up carefully and after being done with her, he sent Scarlett with a nurse to NICU.

She would have to stay there for a few days as she was one month early.

He sighed and turned toward Natasha to deliver the placenta then the bleeding started.

"She is hemorrhaging." He announced.

It took a lot of time to control the bleeding and he had almost lost her. But now she was stable.

He sighed in relief and sat on the chair. He removed his gloves and after disinfecting his hands, he covered his face with them.

Now it is over. He took a sigh of relief and went outside after making sure that Natasha was alright.

When he went outside, he saw Kelly talking with three men and she was looking angry and scared.

.

.

.

Kelly was waiting for any news regarding Natasha. Her legs were drumming on the floor in nervousness.

She prayed to god to save her friend and her child. She had lost her baby but she doesn't want Natasha to ever feel that loss.

She was lost in her thoughts when someone shook her. She looked up and saw that it was three men.

One's head was bleeding and he had a handkerchief pressed on it. And the other two were looking here and there.

"We are looking for Natasha. Do you know her?" The one whose head was bleeding asked her.

"Who are you?" She asked him

Her gut feeling was telling her to be beware of them. They are dangerous people.

"Mr. Knights sent us to give her the money. We went to her house but didn't find her. They told us that she was here. Do you know her?" He said with irritation.

She knew him. She had heard his voice before. Her mind went toward the incident that happened a few hours ago.

She asked internally when she remembered that person who was standing before her.

She stood up and wanted to kill him right there but knew that she couldn't do that.

She was scared for Naty. What if they harmed her again? She took a deep breath and said "No I don't know her."

Before the person could say anything, he noticed Scott who was standing with confusion on his face.

Kelly walked over to Scott with a smile and said "Oh honey. You are here. Come on we have to go. The kids are waiting for us."

Scott was stunned when he heard her reply. What happened to her?

She just gestured to him with his eyes to play along. He did and said, "Oh sorry darling, I got late."

"Is she dead? Your patient. She was almost dead right." She asked and gestured with her eyes to say 'yes'.

He fake signed and said "Yeah. She is dead along with her baby. Poor girl."

The men who were standing there listened to this and left from there.

They believed that she died and they couldn't wait to get rewards from their boss.

Kelly watched them leaving then sighed in relief. She turned toward Scott and said, "I am sorry but I had to do that."

Then she explained to him everything. Scott was fuming mad in rage. He just wanted to kill someone.

"What did Liam want from her?" Scott mumbled

"It's not Liam," Kelly stated, making him look at her in shock.

"No one calls Liam Mr knights. Mr. Knights is his father. And trust me he won't stop until he kills her." She asserted with tears in her eyes.

There was a storm of emotions swirling inside him. He knew what he had to do to save Natasha.

He took his phone out of his pocket and called someone who could help him.

"What a pleasant surprise, Scott." The person answered from the other side.

"Uncle we are coming back to England and I am ready to take over."

!!!

Alternate Ending Chapter 30

Third Person POV

It was a sunny day in London and the birds were chirping in the garden where a family was sitting.

A six-year-old boy was lying on the grass and moving his hands on it.

A beautiful smile was adoring his face and he giggled when the grass tickled his feet.

"Scott, I thought we were gonna play." His friend, Miranda, came and questioned him.

Miranda was the daughter of a maid in their house but they never let her feel like that or mentioned it to her.

She has been Scott's companion since childhood. Their bond was something that can't be broken.

They both were months apart. His mother took care of her too as her mother died 1 year ago, leaving her alone.

They didn't know about her father as her mother had never mentioned him.

After the death of her mother, Miranda was staying with their family.

Scott just giggled and said "Silly, we are playing. The grass is now my friend and he was tickling me."

Miranda's tears started to fell on her chubby cheeks and she said "You are not gonna be my friend anymore"

Her friend has another friend. He would forget about her just like her mother.

Scott looked at her and a frown appeared on his cute face. He wondered what happened to her all of a sudden.

He stood up and said goodbye to his new friend grass and ran toward her.

He stood in front of her and wiped her tears and asked "Why are you crying, Mi,"

She cried hard, making him panic. Then between hiccups, she said "You got a new friend. You are leaving me alone."

He laughed loudly and put his hand on her forehead and pushed it a little and said "You are silly Mi,"

He then kissed her cheek, making her smile, and said "you are my first friend."

She giggled then Scott continued "Let's meet my new friend. He will be your friend too."

They both went and laid down on the grass and moved their hands and laughed when it tickled them.

.

.

.

As time was passing their bonding was flourishing. They had passed the stage of being friends and now they loved each other.

Years had passed and now it was time to live their dream. They both had turned 20 and they had decided on a college for the bachelor's degree.

Miranda had her associate degree but now it was time for the bachelor's.

Meanwhile, Scott had already started his four years for a bachelor's degree in business.

Scott always wanted to be a doctor but he had his wish deep-buried because he knew that his father wanted him to take over his business.

He would never do something which could make his father disappointed. He knew that his father would never say about it.

He respected and loved his father a lot. Men like his father were very rare and he hoped he could be like him too.

He was home as it was his vacation. He greeted his mother and father but his eyes were searching for someone.

Miranda was standing on the stairs waiting for his eyes to devour her.

She was the perfection of beauty. She has the perfect curves and no one can stand up to her level.

OBJ

When their eyes met, they froze. She had seen him after two years and he sure was a sight for the sore eyes.

She couldn't control the beautiful smile which curled on her lips making her more enthralling.

When he winked at her, she smiled and winked back at him making him chuckle.

"Aren't you gonna greet me, Mi," he asked her, making everyone aware of her presence.

He had seen her after a lot of time. Two years to be more precise as he had moved out when he got 18.

Now he couldn't stay away from her. He will tell her about his feelings later tonight and will propose to her.

He didn't want to lose her as she was his first love. He knew that if he got late, someone else would take her.

She came downstairs and hugged him tightly and whispered "I missed you so much, Scott."

He kissed her cheek and replied "I missed you a lot, Mi,"

They stayed in their world for a while until his mother announced, breaking their spell.

"It's time for dinner."

They pulled away and Miranda went inside with Sophie Allen (Scott's mother) to help her.

Scott was looking at her retreating figure with a longing look on his face until his father called his name.

Steve Allen (Scott's father) was just waiting for the day when he would hand over his company and responsibility to his only child.

He had made sure to raise him in the right way. Even though he had spoiled him rotten, he never made him a spoilt brat.

He may not be his biological child but he never let him feel like that. He was, for him and the world, his real child.

FLASHBACK

Sophie Allen had been married before Steve came into her life. Her first husband was abusive and alcoholic.

She had been forced into this. She had her dreams which were brutally shattered when her parents married her off to that abusive man.

She didn't accept him and kept her distance until he forced himself on her and impregnated her with Scott.

After that, the abuse came which never stopped not even in her pregnancy.

She had called the cops one time but he beat the shit out of her and induced her to answer the cops that it was a misunderstanding.

He threatened her with her newborn child and she, being a good mother, lied to the authorities.

Everyone was just like before but then a dreadful day came. Her husband came home drunk on his child's birthday.

Scott was crying as he had a fever and that was disturbing his father.

In his anger, he picked up a pickaxe and went with swaying legs to the room where his wife was consoling his child.

"I will stop your crying now." He said, standing at the entrance of the room.

Sophie saw him and screamed hard. She picked up her crying child and ran toward the bathroom.

She hurriedly closed the door and locked it. She flinched when she heard the banging on the door.

Little Scott was still crying in her arms and she too cried with him. She patted his back and tried to console him but he wasn't stopping.

She watched in horror when her husband started to attack the door with the pickaxe.

It was now or never. Watch her son die or run from there. That was the last thought she had in her mind before she moved according to her plan.

She opened the window of the bathroom and looked back and saw that he had broken down half of the door.

He peeked at her with angry eyes and seethed "I will kill you bitch along with that little bastard."

She climbed out of the window and ran with bare feet toward the main street.

She ran on the silent streets when she heard the furious voice of her husband.

"Come back bitch." He barked

Her heart was in her throat and she was shaking badly. She almost stumbled when her foot stuck with a stone on her way.

She looked down and saw that it had started to bleed. Still, she didn't stop and ran.

Now she was getting tired. The need to take some breath has been intensifying.

She saw a car coming on her way. She stood in front of the car and it stopped.

She knocked on the window of the car which was tinted black. She was desperate to save her child or else she would never plead to someone.

"Please help me. He will kill us." She pleaded to the person who was sitting inside.

The back door of the car opened and she quickly sat inside and closed the door with a shut.

She looked ahead and saw that he was still chasing them and threw his pickaxe toward the car

She closed her eyes not wanting to see this. She hugged her son close to her chest. A sob left her lips thinking that about their condition.

"Drive,"

She heard a hard voice ordering someone. She opened her eyes and looked at her savior.

He was a man who was probably in his late 20s. He was handsome but what awestruck her was his eyes.

He has kind eyes unlike her husband and her father. He was glaring at her husband with hard eyes.

But when he turned his face toward her, his eyes softened when he saw her condition.

He then took her toward his house as he didn't know where to drop her. He made her feel welcomed in his home.

She got to know that he was the richest man in Europe. She was scared and thought that he would be just like the man whose stories she had heard.

But he had proved her wrong. He took care of her and had shown his gentle side to her.

Slowly they both started to fall in love. She was hesitant even though she knew that he wasn't like her first husband.

And most of all, she was still married at that time. She had voiced out her opinion and he just said that it would be alright.

A few days later, an officer came toward the mansion to inform her about the death of her first husband.

She just nodded and closed the door. There wasn't an ounce of sadness on her face.

Instead, she was feeling free. She would have felt bad if he hadn't been chasing toward her to kill her child.

They both got married as they loved each other and there was no reason to stop it.

He had accepted her child and gave him his name. What else she wanted in her life.

FLASHBACK ENDS

Scott shook his head and sat on the couch beside his father. He gave a smile to his father and asked "How are you, dad?"

His father chuckled and while caressing his hair, said "I am good, son."

"So when are you going to ask her?" Steve asked his son.

His parents knew about him and Miranda and were just waiting for his son to ask her.

Scott looked at his father with wide eyes and innocently asked "Dad what are you talking about?"

"I love your mother so I know that you Miranda. You have the same look into your eyes which I have." His dad smirked

Scott just chuckled and said "Tonight,"

.

.

.

Scott was very nervous about tonight. He was going to ask his childhood friend and his love to marry him.

What if she said no? What would he do then? Of course, he would respect her wishes and would stay away.

He had arranged the most beautiful dinner in the lakeside where they used to come in their childhood.

She entered his view and he got mesmerized looking at her. She was so beautiful and she would be his wife for the rest of their life.

Miranda was in awe when she saw this. It was the most luxurious dinner she had ever seen.

Her mother was dead but one thing she has never forgotten was her money talk.

She was 5 years old when her mother died and Aunt Sophie took her under her wings.

Her mother always talked about money and how her life would have been different if she had that.

Her mind struck on that. She started to crave money. She was kind at heart but no one can fulfill her lust for money and power.

He beautifully proposed to her and she was mesmerized by the ring he had given her.

It was beautiful and expensive which she would love to show off in front of her friends.

She kissed them and took him by surprise as it was their first kiss together.

She had gotten what she wanted in her life. She would have a beautiful husband who loves and whom she loves too.

And most importantly, she would have the power and money she had wanted all her life.

She would be the wife of the richest man in Europe. She gave him a dazzling smile when she pulled back.

"Let's get married tonight." She whispered against his lips.

He gave her a bewildered face and said "But I have just proposed to you."

She sighed and said "Okay but within a week."

She somehow made him agree and told the good news to his parents who were very happy for them.

They have had their wedding after a week which was the most expensive wedding in England as per her choice.

For the honeymoon, Miranda had chosen Virgin British Island. They had spent around one month there before coming back to their home.

They were now packing their bag to leave for the college. Scott's vacation had ended and now it was his time to go back.

He was very excited about the university. He should be as his dream was about to come true.

No one knew other than his mother than he had taken the medical course as well.

It was very difficult to manage but still, he was doing it by alternating his days at each school.

He has been an intelligent child. More intelligent than Miranda which had never affected her as she was proud of him.

He was sad that she had to leave him as she had taken admission in an American college.

He hugged her tightly and said "I'll miss you, Mi. Take care of yourself."

She smiled and thanked god that he had given her a husband who loved her so much.

"You will come to meet me, right?" She asked him

He just smiled and gave her an Eskimo kiss and said "Of course I will. I love you."

"I love you too" she replied and dragged him to the bed.

.

.

.

Time had passed normally for everyone else but there were two hearts which were yearnings for each other.

Scott was restless back in London while Miranda was enjoying her surroundings but she was uneasy too.

Even though he said that he would come there to meet her, he couldn't due to his studies.

Miranda had spent almost six months there and now she was well aware of her surroundings.

She had made two friends who are very nice to her just because she had money.

She was missing her husband as she was alone here. She sighed and called Scott and talked to him for hours and hours.

She cut the call and felt somewhat better. She was about to sleep when her phone pinged.

She looked at the message and almost fell when she saw that Knights Enterprises had called her for the interview.

She was so excited and informed Scott about it. He praised her as usual.

Knights Enterprises was the biggest company in America and she had applied for a job here as she was bored with her life.

The next day she went to her destination and got amazed after watching the interior of the company.

It was so huge and that was what she wanted. She went inside and asked the receptionist about it.

She was told to wait for some time. When the receptionist informed her to go to the 25th floor, she stood up and went.

The elevator reached the floor and it opened. She stepped out of the elevator while shuffling with her paper.

Due to not paying any attention, she bumped into someone. She fell on her butt and the person who was standing above him laughed.

She was about to beat him when she stopped. She gasped loudly when she saw the man in front of him.

He was very young, but not more than her. But he was so handsome and his eyes and his laugh mesmerized her.

He was just in a simple but classy black t-shirt along with jeans. A leather jacket was adoring his arm.

But when she realized that he was laughing at her, she stood up and raised her hand to slap him.

He grabbed it in between and said "Watch your hand, sweetheart. I would love to break it though."

"Shut up, you asshole. Apologize for your mistake." She said and crossed her hand.

Her hands were unconsciously pushing her breast together making her more alluring in front of everyone even though she was wearing a modest dress.

She had seen how his eyes went to her bosom and this she took him by surprise and roared "my eyes are up here, idiot."

She huffed and went toward the room where her interview would be held.

She heard a chuckle from behind her and that person said "What your name sweetheart. I am Liam."

She, without turning her back, showed him her middle finger and said aloud 'Fuck you' to him.

Without knowing that she had created a challenge for him. A challenge that would destroy everything and ruin everyone.

She had been selected for the job. She was jumping in joy from inside.

So she went back to her apartment and called her husband to tell him the news.

But he didn't pick up her call as he was busy in his study for the test. For the first after her marriage, she cried in frustration.

After frustration, came anger which could ruin everything. It can even ruin a beautiful bond between husband and wife.

She wore a short and beautiful dress and went to the club to get drunk and forget about her frustration.

Her inner voice was warning her to don't do that. That her husband must have been very busy or he would have never ignored her call.

According to her plan, she went to the club and they allowed her to drink there as she was now 21 years old.

She drank shots after shots until she got intoxicated. She felt a hand on her shoulder and she turned back.

She saw the same man she had seen earlier today and slurred "You followed me."

"My father owns this club and I was here with my friends." He said and pointed toward Adam and Linda who were looking at them curiously.

"Go to them then and leave me alone." She said and turned back to her drink.

"How about we drink some shots?" He asked her

She thought about it for a few seconds and said "Okay"

"You have a British accent. So I am guessing that you aren't from America." Liam started the conversation.

"Yeah, I stay in London with my aunt and uncle." She answered his question

Even though she didn't want to, she couldn't tell him that she is married and she was waiting for her.

She was enjoying his company and in her intoxicated world, she liked it.

They both were now heavily inebriated. He offered to drop her at her house and she nodded eagerly as she couldn't drive.

They reached her home and Liam ordered the driver to wait for him then drop her car at her home.

He put his hand on her shoulder and asked her about her room. She told him and he helped her with it.

He made her sit on her bed. He went to the washroom and came back when he saw a scene which made him hard instantly.

She had removed her dress and was now struggling with her bra. She groaned in frustration and saw that Liam was standing at the door.

She looked at him with glassy eyes and with a pout said "Help me, friend."

He cleared his throat and said, "I think I should leave."

She swayed toward him and asked "Why"

"Because I won't be able to control myself." He whispered in a husky voice.

She just whispered 'Fuck it' and crashed her lips on him as her hands went behind her back, again to remove her bra.

This time she succeeded and he grabbed her ass and lifted her and she wrapped her legs on his waist.

He took them to the bed and that night, she had destroyed the bond of marriage for the first time.

She woke up with a skull breaking pain in her head. She pressed it with her fingers and opened her eyes.

She looked around and stopped at the figure who was sleeping with his back facing her.

His lower half was covered with a black silk sheet, displaying his muscles.

She gulped hard at the sight of him. She prayed to god that she hadn't done that sin.

She was terrified when she looked at herself and saw that she was too hidden by that sheet.

She had sex with a stranger. She felt guilty and she didn't want to believe it despite the sweet aching between her legs.

It was time to find out the man with whom she had slept. She sat up and shook that person to wake him up.

Liam groaned when someone disturbed him. His head was aching but he was feeling good and satisfied.

He turned his face and saw that she was the same girl who was at his dad's office yesterday.

So they fucked. He was very happy to know that they did that or else someone would have fucked her.

She sighed and couldn't believe that she had slept with an arrogant but handsome man.

She had cheated on her husband but what could she do. She was a woman and they have needs.

Her husband was not there to satisfy it. She told this to herself to lessen her guilt.

She thought to tell him that this couldn't happen again and that she was married.

But nothing came from her mind. When he gave her a beautiful smile, she smiled back at him and crashed her lips on his again.

Leaving all shame and forgetting the vows she had made with her husband.

It was just for sometime after that she would leave him and stay with her husband.

No one will get to know about this. It would be their little secret. A secret that would ruin many lives.

.

.

.

It's been a year since Miranda came to America and six months since she had started to sleep with Liam.

Her life was perfect or as she thought. But there was always guilt when Scott's call came.

She was telling herself that it was his mistake that he wasn't with her to satisfy her wife's needs.

She attended his call like always and talked to him. She loves him more than anyone.

But she had started to love Liam too. He was so sweet with her that she almost felt bad for deceiving him.

But she couldn't choose him. Scott was her husband and she would stay with him all her life.

She was riding Liam when her phone rang. She moaned loudly when he rubbed her clit and thought to ignore the call.

But when her phone again rang, she couldn't stop herself from reaching toward the table.

Her face went pale when she saw that it was her husband's call. She stopped moving and ran toward the bathroom and locked it.

She took a deep breath and answered it. With a smile, she said on the phone "Hello Scott,"

"Hey Mi, where are you?" He asked her curiously

She choked on her breath and said "I am at the gym. Have to maintain myself for my husband."

She heard him chuckling and she too giggled. Then he replied "Mi, my flight will land before midnight. I am coming to meet you, my love"

She almost fell on the floor when she heard him. He was coming to meet her and she was here fucking someone.

"Of course Scott. I would be waiting for you." She said in an exciting voice.

Her husband was coming and this had to end. She cut the call and went outside.

Liam was now wearing only his lower flashing abs to her but now she wasn't interesting.

He came toward her with a t-shirt in his hands. He made her wear it which she did absentmindedly.

He cupped her cheeks and asked "Hey what happened? Are you okay?"

She just nodded and pushed his hand away. He felt hurt but didn't say anything.

She just picked up her stuff and wore her clothes without saying anything to him which was making him nervous.

He put his hand in his pocket where he kept the ring which he would give to her after proposing to her.

It might have been only six months but he fell for her hard and fast. He would make her his wife.

No matter how many times Linda tried to tell him about Miranda, he didn't hear.

Linda must be just jealous. He snorted and looked at his love who was looking tense.

She gave him a look and said "I'll see you later, Liam"

He watched as she opened the door and left. He wanted to stop her but he didn't.

He fell on the bed and groaned loudly not knowing that the storm had come to destroy everyone.

She went home and arranged everything so that he wouldn't find out about her little affair.

She waited for him and he came before the time. She ran into his arms to greet him and cried hard.

She cried in guilt which he thought was him. He thought that she was missing him.

She made a special dinner for him as an apology and after that, she took him to the bed.

It was her apologizing. An apology that couldn't wash her sins.

.

.

.

Two months had passed in a blur. She was happy with Scott but still, she was missing Liam.

She was feeling his attitude and his way of expressing his love. She was missing his body even though Scott satisfied her more than him.

She loved him too. She loved both of them but she knew that she couldn't have Liam.

It was very painful to watch his heartbroken face when she told him she was married.

He didn't accuse her even though he had the right to. But that was not enough.

She was pregnant. She had missed her three periods. She had gone to the doctor and he had confirmed it.

She wasn't happy with the baby. It could ruin everything. She was three months pregnant and she had sex with Scott only two months back.

He would leave her. She didn't want to lose him. Liam knew that the baby was his as she was in the office when she fainted.

He was the one who had taken her to the doctor. But after that, she had to break all hopes.

He begged and pleaded to her to don't take his baby away from him. She didn't respond for a time but then she did.

She called him and told him that she was coming to meet him then they would talk.

But she never reached as she got into an accident, leaving this life with her baby.

A baby she never wanted.

!!!

Alternate Ending Chapter 31

Third Person POV

After the death of Miranda, Scott was broken. He had isolated himself in his apartment and didn't go anywhere.

His heart was screaming in agony when he got to know that she was pregnant with his child.

He had lost all his happiness together. He could have saved them if he had decided to go with her.

Losing his wife along with his first child was eating him alive. As a result, he didn't continue his college that year.

On the other side, Liam was silent. He hadn't spoken a single word to anyone.

His parents along with his friends were worried for him. No one but Linda knew what kind of bitch Miranda was.

She had seen her with Scott more than twice. According to her, she was cheating on Liam with someone.

She had been trying to tell him about him but alas he never listened to her.

Had he heard her, he would not be that broken. But his coping method was different from Scott's.

He started to sleep around with every girl not caring about their feelings and what they had wanted from him.

He had to forget about her. He had done everything he could to forget about her and their child.

But he couldn't and he knew that he never would. At least he could try to take his mind off it.

A year had passed and now Scott again started his study as he wanted to keep himself busy.

A few years later he started to practice. He had got his bachelor's degree in both medicine and business.

He told his father about his degree in medicine and he didn't expect his father to be that proud of him.

He hugged his father and his father told him to go for his dream job until he was alive.

After that, it's his wish if he wanted to take over the company. His father told him 'Always listen to your heart.'

But again gloomy days came when his father died when he got 26. He was again heartbroken but not more than his mother.

God had taken her husband who had given her nothing but happiness. She too wanted to die with him but god didn't take her.

After his death, Scott decided that he doesn't want to live here. This place had snatched 3 precious things from him.

His wife, his child, and his father.

He told his decision about his mother and she too decided to move with him. Now there was nothing for her except her child.

And her child was moving too. They have already had a house in America so everything was scheduled.

Scott called his father's younger brother and told him to take over the company as he couldn't do that.

It was then his uncle advised him to take some time off and then tell him his decision.

Until then he would handle it. Scott just nodded and said 'When it calls me, I will come."

.

.

.

PRESENT

Kelly was watching him in confusion as he started to call many people. What was he talking about taking over?

"I want the plane ready within one hour. We are going back home. Call everyone and tell them to prepare everything." She heard him talking on the phone.

As soon as he cut the call, she asked "Scott, What is this?"

He looked into her red eyes which were filled with concern for Natasha just like him.

"I am taking Natasha back to my country. She isn't safe here. We have to think about her and Scarlett's safety" he explained softly

Kelly thought about it for a few and agreed as it was the only way they can save Natasha and her daughter.

"Ok. I am coming with you too." She mumbled

He just nodded and went inside to prepare her for the journey. It would take them 9 hours to reach there.

He went to check on Scarlett and surprisingly she was fine. He had a team of doctors for Scarlett on the plane as he could handle Natasha.

Telling his mother was a different thing. He called her and just told her to pack her bags as they were going back home.

His mother didn't ask him questions because she had noticed the urgency in his voice.

He knew that her mother would be hurt. They had met only 4 months ago but still, her mother always had considered her to be a part of the family.

She knew about his love for Natasha. It was she who pointed this out for him.

She just wanted both of them to be happy in their life even if not together.

Now they all were standing outside the private plane and waiting for his mother who was stuck in traffic.

Natasha had been shifted to a bed and drips were attached to her body. She still didn't get her consciousness back.

And it was quite okay as they had given her the anesthesia. Scarlett was lying beside her mother.

It had taken them almost three hours for Scarlett to be out of the incubator.

A team of doctors has been taking care of Scarlett. They had pumped out some milk to feed her with a bottle.

"Who are you?" Kelly blurted out

Everything was confusing for her. She had thought that he was just an ordinary doctor.

But now after watching all of these, she was overwhelmed. Her mind has not been grasping this.

He chuckled and shrugged "I am Scott."

She rolled her eyes and asked "And"

He raised his hand in peace and said "I am Scott Allen. Son of Steve Allen"

She gasped when she recognized the name of his father. She had met him one time in all her life.

"I know your father. My ex-boyfriend has invested in your company." She sighed

Adam had taken her for a vacation in London. That's where she had met Steve Allen.

"I am taking over that company now. Knights are powerful and to protect both Natasha and Scarlett, I have to be more powerful than them."

She could hear the anger, sadness, love, and possessiveness in his voice and then something clicked in her mind.

"You love her" She stated instead of asking.

He just gave her a small smile and said "I do. With all my heart. But she doesn't and I respect it."

Kelly just sighed and said "She has been alone since her childhood. No one was her friend except me. Liam had shown her his fake love and poor girl fell into his trap."

She took a breath and continued "You deserve her. She will come around, believe me. Just don't give up on her."

"I won't," he promised.

Before they both could say, his mother came. She was looking panicked when she saw Kelly with Scott.

Thinking that he might have chosen her instead of Natasha. It wasn't like she didn't like Kelly.

She adored Kelly as much as she did Natasha. But she had those mother instincts to protect the latter one.

She stood in front of them and blurted out "You both aren't getting married. Right?"

Kelly chuckled loudly and made a face "Sophie he is like my brother."

Her nose was scrunched in revulsion while thinking about it. And about marriage, she wasn't ready for one after Adam's betrayal

Sophie took a sigh of relief and a smile was back on her face "so what happened?"

"Mom I'll tell you everything but we have to leave," Scott said and they moved inside the plane.

They sat on their seat and waited for the plane to take off. When it was done, Scott got up and went toward where both mother and daughter were.

He stepped inside the room and was welcomed by the cries of his little goddess.

Her whole face was red and he saw that the nurse was struggling to feed her.

He took some steps toward them and said "Give her to me."

The nurse gave him Scarlett who was still crying. He patted her back and cuddled her to his chest.

Her whimpers were slowly but surely subsidized. She opened her eyes and looked at him with those big innocent blue eyes.

He was mesmerized when she hypnotized him with her deep blue orbs.

He touched her soft skin and she started to wriggle in his arms and cried again.

He rubbed circles on her back and said "Let me check your Mumma. Then I will feed you, goddess."

She just pouted and closed her eyes even though she wasn't sleepy. He chuckled and went toward Natasha.

He checked her and everything was fine. Now they just have to wait for her to wake up on her own.

He leaned down to kiss her forehead and said "Wake up soon, Tasha."

He went outside praying to god that she woke up soon and everything will be alright after that.

He took Scarlett outside where his mother and Kelly were talking. His goddess's whimpers altered them.

Her mother had a face full of emotions. Kelly had filled her quickly with all the necessary information.

Her eyes were glassy with teary when she saw the joy in Scott's eyes. He had wanted this for so long but god had snatched that opportunity from him years ago.

"Isn't she beautiful, Mom?" He asked his mother.

"She is so gorgeous," Sophie mumbled slowly as she was still staring at her.

"Now let me feed her. Then you can take her." He said and sat on the couch.

He cuddled her to his chest and put the bottle in her mouth. Instantly, she latched on it and sucked it slowly.

His focus was on her as she was lazily gulping it. He gave her his finger and she gripped it in her weak fist.

She was underweight just like her mother. It would take both of them some time to gain weight.

He would take care of them and nurture them as long as Natasha wanted.

He wanted to do it for the rest of his life. He would love Natasha always no matter what happens.

If she denied his love, he would stay with them as friends but he won't leave them alone again.

A flash snapped him out of his dreams. He turned his face to the side and saw a mobile in Kelly's hand.

He furrowed his eyebrows at her and she just shrugged and said "I wanna capture all beautiful moments and have to show it to Naty."

It took them almost 9 hours to reach London. The weather was cold and the sun was nowhere to be seen.

There were a lot of cars which had come to pick them up. Natasha has been taken directly to his home by Ambulance.

They all went by car and reached his house quickly. This place was bigger than the entire Knights enterprises.

The house was built in the 1890s and with time they had refurbished it, making it more intriguing.

OBJ

"You are loaded dude," Kelly whistled at the sight of the house, making both of them laugh.

"Come on dear. Let me show you your room." Sophie said to Kelly

Kelly nodded and said "Please show me next to Naty's. I want to be close to her."

"Sure dear," Sophie said with a smile

Kelly turned to look at Scott who had Scarlett in his arms and said "Let me take her now."

Scott just sighed and gave his goddess to Kelly even though he wanted nothing more than to keep her.

He has been attached to her the instant Natasha came into his cabin that time for the check-up.

But he had to share her with everyone. He kissed her cheek and gave her to Kelly who almost cried in joy.

She had always been wanting to carry a child. She had thought that her child would be the one to fulfill her wish.

But alas, god had taken her baby before she could come into this world.

A prayer left her lips which came from her heart.

'God, please make her destiny different from her mother.'

.

.

.

The house was silent at midnight. The snow had started to fall making the environment colder than before.

But no one was sleeping. Scott was sitting on a chair in Natasha's room.

He wanted to be here when she wakes up so that if something went wrong, he would be there with her.

Kelly was yawning as she hadn't got any sleep in the past two days. She had Scarlett in her arms for feed.

'She is just like Naty' she thought in her mind then her face turned into anger 'But she got that bastard's eyes.'

The sweet girl blinked her eyes at her aunt then yawned and closed it, wanting to sleep.

She removed the bottle from her mouth and put it back on the table. She then kissed Scarlett's cheeks and inhaled her baby smell.

"Your Momma will meet you soon." She whispered in her ear.

.

.

.

Natasha stirred in her sleep. She was having a nightmare where she died along with Scarlett.

Tears were rolling down her eyes and a painful whimper left her lips alerting Scott who was sitting beside her.

He rushed toward her and said "Easy, Tasha"

He grabbed her hand gently and rubbed circles on it to soothe her. Her whimpers came to end and now she was silent.

The stillness was only for a few seconds before she opened her eyes with a gasp.

She looked at her surroundings and the first thing she noticed was Scott who was smiling at her.

She blinked her eyes and saw that she was neither at her house nor in the hospital.

She was in a luxurious room but she doesn't know that it belonged to Scott.

She tried to sit up, that's when Scott stopped her and said "Don't sit, Tasha."

She frowned and her eyes went to her stomach where her bump was missing.

"My baby. Oh god, what happened to my Scarlett." She started to weep thinking that her nightmare was true.

She had lost her baby and now she wanted to die too. Her cries weren't stopping thinking about the death of her baby.

"Scarlett is here with Kelly. You had given birth to her." Scott's voice pulled her back from her inner crying.

She stared at him in skepticism like she didn't believe whatever he said. Even though she knew that he wouldn't lie.

"Really," she asked him softly

"Wait, I'll call her. Let me check your stitches." He said in a professional voice.

She just nodded, waiting for this to be over so that she could meet her daughter.

Her heart was thundering in her chest in prosperity. She was going to meet her daughter after all.

She closed her eyes and remembered what happened before she fell unconscious.

She shivered in fear. She had thought that would be her last time. But thank god Kelly was there.

It didn't take much time to check her. After that, he went out of the room to call Kelly.

Kelly came into the room with joy. Finally, her best friend was awake and now everything would be alright.

Scott had taken Scarlett in his arms as she was in a hurry. His goddess was sleeping with a pout on her face.

She was so light just like a feather. She was looking like a white cotton ball in his arms as she was so tiny.

He waited for some and let them talk in peace. After ten minutes, he went inside and he heard Kelly talking to Natasha.

"He loves you, Naty. Give him a chance."

It was time to let them know his presence. So he cleared his throat and moved inside.

The content smile on Natasha's face after watching her daughter was so precious that he wanted to capture it.

He went toward her and placed pillows behind her so that she could sit.

She winced in pain but the joy to meet her daughter had overcome it.

He gently placed the baby on her lap and the tears again started to fall from her eyes but this time in happiness.

She was scared to touch her daughter afraid that she would hurt her in some way.

She raised her with her shaky arms and kissed her whole face. A sob left her lips when her baby opened her eyes.

"She is so pure" she whispered

"Just like you Naty," Kelly whispered

Natasha turned her face to Scott and with a worried expression asked "Is she alright? She is a premature baby. And she is so light"

He chuckled after hearing her questions and said "she is good but a little underweight like you are Tasha."

She cuddled the baby to her chest and pecked her cheek. Now it was time to ask the questions.

"Where am I? And what happened?" She asked nervously.

Scott sighed and said "You are at my house in London. We aren't in America anymore."

She shook her head and the panic took over her and she said "No you aren't understanding. Liam would kill me if he gets to know that you are helping me."

A shaky breath left her lips and she continued "He tried to kill me before Kelly came and he was again getting me raped."

A loud sob echoed in the room but she couldn't stop it. She was scared not for herself but for her daughter and their future.

"Why didn't you tell me anything, Naty? I thought we were sisters." Kelly asked her sadly

Scott had told her about it. Kelly wanted nothing more than to kill Liam and his father.

Then she shook her head and said "It's okay we will talk about it later. Right now you just rest. I am here with you."

"You also take some rest, kelly. You need it. I am here with them." Scott told her politely.

She nodded and kissed Natasha's cheek and went back to the room which has been allotted to her.

There was a pin drop silence which was not uncomfortable. It was Natasha who decided to break it.

"Thank you so much for helping me. I am so grateful for what you have been doing for us."

She bit her lips and began "I am sorry for that night too. I didn't have any right to behave like a bitch."

He took a step toward her and sat in front of her. Then he cupped her cheeks and said "stop, Tasha."

She stopped and looked at him with those grey orbs which were drawing him toward her.

She had a pink blush on her cheeks when she saw him looking at her in awe.

"I love you. Always have and always will. I won't give up on us again. Take your time then tell me your decision. I will respect your decision."

His words did something to her heart. It skipped a beat when she saw the love in his eyes.

She gnawed on her lips and said "Okay"

She would give him one chance so that she won't regret it later. But right now is not the time.

It was her time to heal and put on some weight and take care of her child.

"Now sleep. I am here and no one will trouble you both again."

The last words she heard before she fell into a deep slumber.

.

.

.

Time had passed but this time it has brought only contentment for Natasha and her daughter.

She has been living in Scott's house for six months and she couldn't be happier.

Sophie had taken the role of her mother and she never forgot to feed her five times a day so that she could gain healthy weight.

Kelly went back to Chicago after staying in London for 3 months. She had her exams as she couldn't miss them.

She didn't want to leave Natasha alone here. But she knew that they would take care of her.

And most importantly she belonged here with her daughter and with Scott.

Scott had joined the company after making sure that Natasha was alright.

It had taken some time for him to adjust everything according to him but he was glad that his uncle was there for him.

It was arduous work for him to bring down the Knights Enterprises. They had many connections with the underworld.

Their business was legal and they had many cops under their pocket. But it's okay he could handle it.

His primary objective was to keep Natasha and Scarlett away from the devil James Knights.

He had heard from his man that Liam had gotten married to his childhood friend Linda.

He scoffed loudly, attracting the attention of Scarlett who was in his arms.

She smiled and started to clap. She thought that he had done it to play with her and she liked it.

It was Sunday and he decided to spend it with his family. For him, both Natasha and his goddess are his family.

His mother had baked some cookies and now they were sitting outside in the garden.

"Sophie I am stuffed." Natasha pleaded to his mom.

"No, you are not. Eat this I have made it especially for you." Sophie said and fed her with her hands.

"You are amazing. I have never felt loved before." She spoke softly.

"You are different from Miranda. She didn't want to be fed by anyone, not even Scott." Sophie said not knowing what she had done.

Scott froze in his seat. Why did his mother have to tell her about Miranda? He wanted to be the one to tell her about it.

"Who is Miranda? I haven't seen her here." She questioned with confusion.

Sophie looked at Scott with furrowed eyebrows and asked "you didn't tell her about her?"

He groaned loudly and said, "Mom I was about to."

"Natasha I'll tell you everything tonight." He told her gently

She nodded her head and said "Okay"

It was night time and Scarlett was sleeping in her after her feed.

She had gained the right amount of weight in these six months and now she was a chubby one.

Scarlett wasn't the only one. Natasha had got her original figure back but now she has better curves than before.

A knock on the door pulled her out of her thoughts and she said loudly "please come"

Scott entered the room and she gave him a smile filled with shyness. She has always been like that with him.

But now it had gotten worse as she knew that he loved her. Did she deserve his pure love?

That's what she has always been thinking. According to her, no one would love her, especially not him. Because he knew that she had got raped.

It was not her fault but somewhere in her mind, she believed that it was her who had provoked him somehow.

But now she wanted to be loved. If he really loves her then she would give him a chance to prove it.

Scott was really nervous as he didn't know what her reaction would be.

He licked his dry lips and sat in front of her on the bed. He took a deep breath and without wasting any moment, he started.

He had told her everything from their childhood to his wife's death. He again got sad when he remembered his wife.

But now the sadness didn't break his heart like before. After meeting Natasha, he barely remembered her and that was enough to make him guilty.

"..... then I met you and you know the rest." He finished with a sigh.

He didn't lift his head to gaze at her. He was scared that she would be angry with him as he didn't tell her about it earlier.

Natasha was in a dilemma. The decision to not give him a chance was getting elevated.

Thinking that he might be using her as a rebound. Or he had been finding his dead wife inside her.

But a rational part of her was telling her that he would never do something like that.

She grabbed his hand and he got startled as this was the first time she had touched him freely.

She bit her lips and said, "do you still love your wife?"

"I will always love her as she was my best friend first. But now I am only in love with you. No one else." He whispered.

She licked her dry lips and said "I am ready to give you the chance."

He blinked his eyes thrice before he could finally comprehend what she had just said.

His eyes glittered with tears and happiness and he said "You made me so happy, Tasha. I promise I won't let you regret your decision."

"I hope you won't." She mumbled timidly

He embraced her tightly and she sighed in content. She was ready to let go of her inner demons.

She will start her new life where there is no despair.

!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So yeah Naty agreed. This story ends here and the next will be the Epilogue.

And there are no Bonus Chapters.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS

Till then



Alternate Ending Epilogue

6 years later

Third Person POV

The sun was shining brightly and its rays were falling through the window on a woman's face who was sleeping under the sheets.

Her beautiful face scrunched in irritation and she turned her back to avoid it.

She heard a chuckle from behind her. Her body shuddered when the person traced his finger on her naked back.

"You did that deliberately to wake me. Didn't you?" She asked him in irritation.

"You caught me" he snickered

She heard him walking toward the window then he closed the curtains making her smile.

He then came back to the bed and kissed her bareback. A moan left her lips when he trailed the kisses toward her neck.

"Wake up, Tasha" he whispered in her ear in his husky voice.

A giggle passed her lips and she quickly pressed her lips together to muffle it.

She chuckled when he turned her on her back. Her eyes were gleaming in euphoria and that was enough to make him happy.

He leaned to peck her lips and said "I love you."

She cupped his cheek and before placing her lips on his, whispered "I love you too."

He hovered over her and placed wet kisses on her neck making her tremble.

He was about to remove the sheets when he felt a strong kick making him jump.

Natasha laughed loudly when she saw his startled face. She pushed him a little and sat up slowly.

"My boy is possessive, Mr. Allen. He doesn't like to share his mom with anyone." She whispered

She heard the knock on the door and she said "Not even you. Go and open the door. It's Scar,"

He sighed sadly and got out of bed. His children had just cockblocked him.

He turned back and saw that Natasha went inside the closet quickly as fast as she could with her 7-month pregnant belly.

He smiled as he went to open the door. He unlocked it and immediately he was attacked by a cute monster.

"Good morning, Daddy" A six-year-old Scarlett hugged her father and kissed his cheek.

His heart always swelled with contentment whenever he heard her calling him 'Daddy'.

He picked her up in his arms and said "A very good morning to my goddess."

She rubbed her sleepy eyes and said "Where is Mumma?"

"Your Mumma went to freshen up. Come on let's get you ready. It's time for your school." Scott said and took her toward her room.

He got her ready into her school uniform and then took her toward the dining area for her breakfast.

Natasha was cooking in the kitchen and she wanted it to be done quickly so that her husband won't scold her again.

OBJ

She got dressed as soon as she could and didn't even comb her hair. She just wrapped it in a messy bun.

She wanted to feed her husband and her baby girl the food which she had made.

She quickly made and told the maid to serve the food and if Scott asked then told him that she had made it.

Then she waddled toward the dining room and sat on the chair. She was breathing heavily and quickly gulped water to calm it.

After a few minutes, she heard footsteps. She instantly picked up the book from the table which she had placed earlier.

She opened it and acted like she has been reading it since the time she came here.

"Mumma," she heard his daughter scream and she stood up and turned toward her.

Just like she did with Scott earlier, she hugged her legs quickly but with precaution.

"My baby," Natasha said and caressed her brunette hair.

Scarlett looked at her with a smiling face and she pecked her belly and said "Good morning Steve. I love you."

Due to pregnancy hormones, tears filled in Natasha's eyes and she said "He loves you too, Scar."

"Come and have your breakfast. Then your father will drop you." She said

She called for the maid and she came and served all of them. Scott ate one forkful of fried eggs, he stopped and stared at her.

She just gave him an innocent look and turned her face and fed one piece of bacon to Scar.

"Tasha" he groaned

"How many times do I have to say that don't strain yourself," he said in a professional voice.

She just gave him a fake sad look and said "sorry. I just wanted to feed you both."

Even though she didn't want to, a tear fell from her eyes making him feel guilty.

He stood up and sat beside her and pleaded to her "Baby please don't cry. I am sorry"

"Can I make food for you and Scar always?" She asked him with a sad face.

"No," he said and her face fell more.

Then with a sigh, he continued "Only breakfast."

She squealed and hugged him and said "You are the best husband."

He narrowed his eyes and said, "You emotionally blackmailed me."

She just pecked his lips and he turned into a sweet kiss only to pull away when he heard 'Eww' loudly.

They looked back and saw that Scarlett's face was scrunched in revulsion and her eyes were filled with tears.

"Daddy you kissed Mumma. You gave her germs." She started to cry loudly.

"What did you tell her?" Natasha asked him angrily and patted her back to soothe her.

Scott bit his lips and said, "I might have told her that kissing leads to passing the germs then we would get sick."

"I'll talk to you later." She warned him

Then she turned to her weeping baby and said "Baby I am fine. Mumma and Daddy can kiss."

"You are not sick," she asked her mother with teary eyes.

Natasha shook her head and said "No baby. I am perfectly alright."

Then she wiped her tears and said "Okay"

After that, they had their breakfast in silence. Then Scott dropped Scarlett at her school and came back.

He saw that Natasha was not in the living room. He went to their room and laughed when he saw her.

She had a bowl of chips sitting on her bump and she was working on a Laptop.

She heard him and saw him standing at the doorway. She just looked at him then turned her attention back to her work.

Letting him know that she was angry with him. He sighed and knew what would make her happy.

He laid beside her and saw that she was looking into the presentation for the project.

He rested his head on her belly and caressed it. He moved one hand to take a bunch of chips from her bowl that's when she slapped his hand away.

"It's mine. Go and take yours." She told him angrily.

One thing he had noticed in pregnancy that she gets angry quickly.

But he wouldn't be a good husband if he didn't know how to melt her anger in seconds.

He sat up and put her legs in his lap and still she ignored him. He started to massage her foot and just like that her angry mode turned off.

She moaned when he rubbed her sore nerves. This time her pregnancy was different from the last time.

Last time she had worked throughout her pregnancy but this time, her husband never let her do any work.

A few weeks ago he had seen the swelling on her feet and he went into professional mode and asked her to stop doing any work.

That's the reason he wanted her to stop making food for them. He wanted her to rest completely.

He leaned down and bit on her cute little toe and asked "Feeling better"

She gave him a big smile and answered "Much better."

He took the Laptop from her hands and put it on the table along with the bowl of chips.

He kissed her passionately and turned them so that he was on his back and she was straddling him.

"Do you have any appointments?" She asked him with dark eyes.

He shook his head and whispered, "No I am all yours today."

That's all she needed to hear before she removed her sweater revealing her bare body to him.

And soon they got lost in themselves.

.

.

.

FLASHBACK

When Natasha decided that she would give Scott a chance, she was serious.

She wanted to forget her past and move on with her life. She had endured enough since childhood.

And if life was giving her a chance to be happy, then she would gladly accept it.

They started it by going out as friends as Natasha didn't leave the house since she came here.

After a couple of months, Scott took her on a date and she enjoyed it well.

With that, Scott's fatherly affection for her daughter has been increasing.

He told her one day that she should continue her studies. But she stopped him and said

'You have been doing enough for us. I don't want you to do this anymore. I will find a job soon. After that, I will move out.'

She had taken enough help of his and now it was time to stand back on her feet.

She left Scarlett with Sophie and went to search for a job and surprisingly she got it.

She started to work immediately and a month had passed. She just wanted to earn enough money so that she could move out and stay on her own with her daughter.

A day came when Scott had officially kidnapped her from the place where she has been working.

She wanted to be upset with him but she couldn't when she saw that Scarlett and Sophie were with him.

Scarlett was sitting in her car seat with an adorable expression on her face. She was going to be one tomorrow.

OBJ

She sat in the passenger seat and they reached the airport. They reached their destination by his Private plane.

She had been asking him since they boarded the plane. But he was silent and said only one word.

'Surprise'

She was happy that someone was surprising her. And that happy feeling turned into joy when she saw that they were in Hong Kong.

"Disneyland?" She asked him with a twinkle in her eyes.

He just nodded and she squealed loudly and hugged him and mumbled over and over again.

'Thank you'

She has always been wanting to come here. She remembered the time when Kelly told him about her journey to Disneyland.

She was so jealous of her and every kid at that time. After getting back to her house, she cried hard.

But now just because of him, she and her daughter would get to enjoy it.

"We are going to celebrate Scarlett's birthday here," Scott said and they sat in the car.

She smiled and thanked god that he had given her this happiness and a lover like Scott.

The next day, they roamed Disneyland. They all were enjoying it, especially Scarlett who has been clapping her hands the whole time.

After a day full of exhaustion, they went back to the hotel in the evening.

But the day was not over yet. When she reached her room, she found a huge gift box on her bed and a note was annexed with it.

She picked it up and read it.

'I will be waiting for you to bless me with your presence. Wear this, please.'

She giggled when she saw that he had drawn a pleading emoji. She opened it and gasped when she saw a beautiful dress.

OBJ

It was a brownish crimson and it covered her knees completely. It gave a peek of her cleavage to outsiders.

A pair of beige stilettos were also inside it. She quickly wore it too and glanced herself in the mirror.

She gazed at her reflection in amazement. She was looking amazing and beautiful.

She quickly did her makeup which she had found in the box. He had thought about everything.

She took a deep breath and wondered if he had it planned since morning because Sophie had taken Scarlett with her an hour ago.

She heard a knock on the door and she opened it nervously. She looked at him in awe. He was looking so handsome.

"You are looking breathtaking" he commented with a smile.

She blushed red and with a shy smile said "Thankyou."

Then he took her to the restaurant for dinner. They talked throughout the whole dinner and when the music started, he held out his hand.

She took his hand and they moved toward the dance floor. After that, they went outside and sat near the pool.

She removed her heels and dipped her legs in the water. He did the same and with their feet in the water, they laid back on the grass.

She was looking at the stars with a gleam in her eyes. She was so happy. This was one of the best days of her life.

But his gaze was only on her. He grabbed her hand and kissed it, making her red as a tomato.

"Do you know what I was thinking when I met you for the time?" Scott asked her

She turned her gaze to him and blinked "No"

"I wanted to know if you would ever marry me." He confessed.

She gasped when she felt him slipping a ring on her finger. It was a pink diamond which was looking expensive.

OBJ

"So will you marry me?" He asked her with hope shimmering in his eyes.

She closed her eyes and thought about it for some time. Liam had asked her the same question but he didn't give her an engagement ring.

He had just promised. A promise which was fake just like him. And here Scott was giving her an engagement ring.

'Stop Natasha, don't think like that. Scott is different from that bastard'

This time her heart and brain both were supporting Scott and she knew that she had to take this risk.

"Yes, I will," she whispered with red cheeks.

Scott was stunned. She actually would marry him. God had finally heard him.

"Thank you," he grinned

He leaned closed to her and she closed her eyes instantly. He stopped and waited for her to open it again.

When she opened it, he asked "May I"

She just nodded and felt his soft lips on her. This kiss had sparks that were erupting from inside.

They got married within 6 months and they couldn't be happier. They had spent all the time together.

Sophie was so happy to see her son and Natasha happy. She prayed to god to never let anything to them.

Even though they got married, still they didn't consummate their marriage.

Natasha wasn't ready for it and Scott respected her decision. He would wait for her forever.

She had started her studies as now she didn't have any excuse to decline his help.

She slowly started to fall in love with him but still consummating their marriage was a big step for her.

It wasn't until Kelly came to their first wedding anniversary, she decided to help her.

She tried to make Natasha understand that she was punishing the wrong person.

Scott had done nothing wrong and he shouldn't deserve that punishment.

Her decision was clearly showing her mistrust for him. That's she should forget her past and move on.

Natasha was now ready after her talk with Kelly. She told her to handle Scarlett for the night and she agreed.

That night they consummated their wedding and Scott had put his need aside and focused on hers.

It was better than her first time. She got pleasure in this but last time, he had only given her pain.

Scott laid beside her and pulled her in his arms. She placed her head on his chest.

Even though she was content, something had been roaming in her head and that made her weep.

He felt wetness on his chest and he peeked at her and saw that she was crying.

He sat up along with him, she too sat up and turned her face away from him.

He cupped her face and asked, "Natasha, did I hurt you?"

He was worried sick the whole time thinking that he might have hurt her even though he had been nothing but gentle.

She shook her head and asked the question which made him angry and confused.

"Did I satisfy you? If I didn't, I am so sorry. I'll learn everything. Please don't be angry with me."

He gaped at her. How could she say that? That's when he remembered her talk when he went to her home.

'He said that I didn't satisfy him'

He remembered how broken she was. That bastard had broken her self esteem.

"Natasha, I don't want to hear these words from your mouth again. I married you because I love you, not your body."

He wiped her tears and kissed her forehead and said "To answer your question, you have satisfied me more than I ever was."

This was the starting of their happy married life. He had taken on their second honeymoon.

They went to Las Vegas and this time Scarlett went with them who was now a toddler.

She had started to babble a lot of things but her first word was 'Mumma'.

Natasha was over the moon that day. She had been waiting for this moment and now she got it.

They had decided that they would for sometime before planning a baby as Scarlett was young right now.

They roamed the beautiful city. Scarlett was in her stroller which Scott was dragging.

Both their happiness was short-lived because someone from their past had come.

Liam was at a business meeting and Linda decided to tag along as she had a photoshoot here.

Liam couldn't believe his eyes when he saw Natasha and Scott together along with a baby, his baby.

She was looking so beautiful but how could she be alive. He was being told that she died during the delivery.

He was broken and the guilt was eating him alive. Everything was shattered when Linda told him that she was pregnant.

He wanted to rectify his mistake and he married her for the sake of his child.

Natasha stopped when she noticed him. Scott stopped too and wondered what happened to her suddenly.

But when he followed her gaze, he froze. And at that moment he had wanted nothing more than to beat him.

"Natasha," Linda gasped when she saw her. Liam had told her everything about Natasha and him.

"Linda, how are you?" She asked her in a calm voice.

"Oh god, you are alive." She blurted out

"I am," she chuckled

"Meet my husband Scott. Scott, she is Linda, Liam's wife. Right?" Natasha introduced them.

"She is your baby," Linda asked her when she saw Scarlett's angry face.

"Yes she is our baby," Natasha said while linking her hand with Scott who was smiling at her gesture.

Linda was gazing at Scott with narrowed eyes, trying to match the puzzles in her mind and she finally did.

"You, I know you." She said and turned toward Liam who was telling with his eyes to 'shut up' but she didn't get that.

"Liam, remember I had told you that Miranda was cheating on you. He was the person." She said and glared at Scott who was confused.

"I have seen them together many times. Remember when you told me that she was pregnant and that you were the father."

"Wait hold on" Scott cut her in the middle and pulled out his mobile.

It took him some time to find the picture as his hands were continuously shivering.

He didn't want it to be true. He just hoped to god that she might be talking about some other Miranda.

A hope which is going to be crushed brutally.

He showed her picture to Linda and the fire in her eyes confirmed that they were talking about his dead wife.

"Is this Miranda you are talking about?" He asked nervously

"Yes she was the bitch who had cheated on Liam with you even when she was pregnant with his baby," Linda stated.

He felt like someone had snatched the ground under his feet. Suddenly he felt like he couldn't breathe.

That's when he heard "Dada".

That was and the continuous soothing of Natasha was enough for him to be normal.

He bent down to kiss Scarlett's cheeks. She somehow calmed down his anger.

He then gave a cold look to Linda and said " She was my wife when she had been cheating on me with Liam."

He then turned to Liam and said "You made a big mistake, Mr. Liam Knights."

With that, he took his family back to the hotel. Natasha was silent through their journey.

She didn't say anything and waited for him to be normal. This might be quite a shock for him to know that his wife had been cheating on him.

And the child he thought was his, wasn't actually his. It was Liam's child.

It was night when Scott came to her and sat on his knees in front of her and hugged her legs.

She felt tears on her legs and she caressed his head to reassure him that she was there for him.

"What was my mistake? I had given her everything she asked. I had never befriended anyone since childhood because she tends to get angry easily." He asked her while crying.

"It's not your fault. It was her fault. She doesn't deserve your precious tears. Don't cry for her baby." She consoled him.

She placed her hand on his cheek and he raised her head and looked at her with his teary eyes.

"I love you and I always will."

The silence was the only answer she got. She looked at him and he was frozen.

This was the first time she has ever confessed her feelings. She was afraid to love him but it just happened and she couldn't control it.

"I love you too," he smiled.

They both were thinking the same thing 'They will heal each other.'

Before they went back to London, they met Mother Angela where she told Natasha that someone had been looking for her.

She gave her a letter and she took it from her and gave her a goodbye hug.

She sat on a bench and Scott and Scarlett were with her. She was very nervous to read it.

But still, she did and the letter left her broken. Her mother loved her and her family too.

[You can read the letter in Chapter 31.]

She didn't notice her mother's surname. When Scott insisted, she decided to meet her mother.

She went to the mentioned address with her husband and her daughter.

The maid opened the door and she went inside. She was feeling uneasy to meet her.

But the moment her mother hugged her, she sobbed hard on her chest.

She let out all her despair which she had been feeling since her childhood.

Both mother and daughter cried after meeting each other after so many years.

It was when Adam came, she froze. Her brother had been the one who had hurt Kelly.

When he moved to hug her, she showed him her palm and said "Don't"

His face was showing the pain he was feeling at that time. He wanted nothing more than to hug his sister.

"You betrayed my friend. You deluded Kelly." She said in a cold voice.

She then turned to her mother and said "Mumma, I'll meet you soon but don't want to meet this person."

With that, she ran from the house. She couldn't breathe in that house anymore.

How could she accept him when he deceived her soul sister? She would never forgive him.

When they reached home, she again started her studies. It took her 3 more years to attain her bachelor's degree in business.

Scott watched in amazement when his wife got her degree. He couldn't be more proud of her.

She was everything a man could want. The best mother, a wonderful wife, and most importantly a beautiful person from inside out.

He trained her rigidly under him and when he thought that she was ready, he gave her the full authority to run his entire business.

She was so scared that time and she had told him that she couldn't do that alone.

That's when he told her that 'You will never be alone. I would be there for you all the time.'

He again went back to being a full-time doctor. This was what he wanted from the start.

But he always helped her and gave her his full attention no matter how busy he was.

In the previous 3 years, he slowly destroyed Knights Enterprises. He pulled some strings and Liam's father was imprisoned.

It seemed like many people hated him as he died in a prison fight. Or Scott's uncle might be the reason behind it.

Scott started to buy shares from Liam's company and soon he acquired it completely.

Now Liam was ruined. He had lost everything. First Natasha and their child and then his child with Linda.

Due to Liam's spoiled reputation, no one had given Linda any project.

They have a limited amount of money left and Linda knew that there was only one way to end this.

.

.

.

Natasha was sitting in her office working on some files then when her phone rang.

She picked it up and asked "Yes"

"Mam sorry to disturb you but Mrs. Linda Knights has been asking to meet you. Shall I send her?"

She bit her lips and responded, "Send her in."

She took a deep breath and said 'Come in when there was a knock on the door.

Linda entered inside with a nervous look and felt a little better when she saw that Natasha was smiling.

"Sit, please," Natasha said politely.

She would never treat her harshly as Linda had never been rude to her when she had nothing.

"How are you?" Natasha asked her

"I am not fine. I am sorry Natasha for whatever Liam had done to you. But please forgive us." She told her with tears in her eyes.

Natasha was taken aback by her words. Why would she say something like that?

"Liam is so embarrassed and your security didn't even let him enter as your husband told them not to."

"We came here to apologize. Please tell your security to let him enter."

Natasha bit her lips and thought to do it. She would end this game right here and right now.

She called the security and said, "Let Liam enter."

"Mam but sir" she cut off the guard and said, "I said let him in." And cut the call.

The guard let him enter but they didn't forget to beat him up. After that, one of them called Scott and told him everything.

Liam entered the room and saw Natasha sitting professionally on a chair with a calm look on her face.

Liam stepped toward her and fell on her knees. He joined his head together and said "Please forgive me, Natasha."

Natasha now knew that the last time when someone came to kill her wasn't being sent by Liam.

His tears were falling and along with that, the blood was also trickling down his face mixed with tears.

He explained to her everything from starting and apologized to her again and again.

It wasn't until Linda said something that melted her anger off.

'I am pregnant. Please think about my baby. You are a mother too."

She stood up with a mind to finish this chapter. She took some steps back from them and said in a cool voice.

"I forgive you, Liam."

"Natasha"

She heard her name being called by none other than her husband. She looked at the door and saw him standing there with a dull face.

She went toward him and hugged him tightly. She hid her face on his chest and said "I forgave them, Scott"

She pulled away and with tears in her, she said "Give him his company back. Please"

She had forgiven him the moment she realized that she loves Scott. She just wanted to stay in her present and not in her past.

She knew that she might not be able to move on until she forgave him. That's what she was doing right now.

She was forgiving everyone.

FLASHBACKS ENDS

After their lovemaking, Scott was lying on his back with Natasha's head on his chest.

She had a natural glow on her face which could make anyone envious.

"I can't believe Kelly got married to him. I thought that she only liked him." Natasha started the conversation.

Scott just chuckled and said "Kelly is a different type of woman. No one can say what she thinks."

She hit his chest in anger and sat up then said, "You are calling my best friend weird."

Scott knew that he couldn't win so he just raised his hands in peace and said "I am sorry, Tasha. I am weird. Is that alright?"

She just smiled and leaned to peck his lips and said "But you are my weird. I love you, Mr. Allen"

He grinned and said, "I love you too, Mrs. Allen."

The End

!!!

Authors Note

Hello guys

Hope you liked it

So yeah this was the end. Wait let me cry peacefully.

I am fine now.

I can't believe it ended. This story was the first story I had ever thought about.

No Bonus Chapters.

Anyways. I want to thank you all for being with me throughout the journey.

I love you all and I want to thank you all from the bottom of my heart.

COMMENTS, AND FOLLOWS.

Till then

